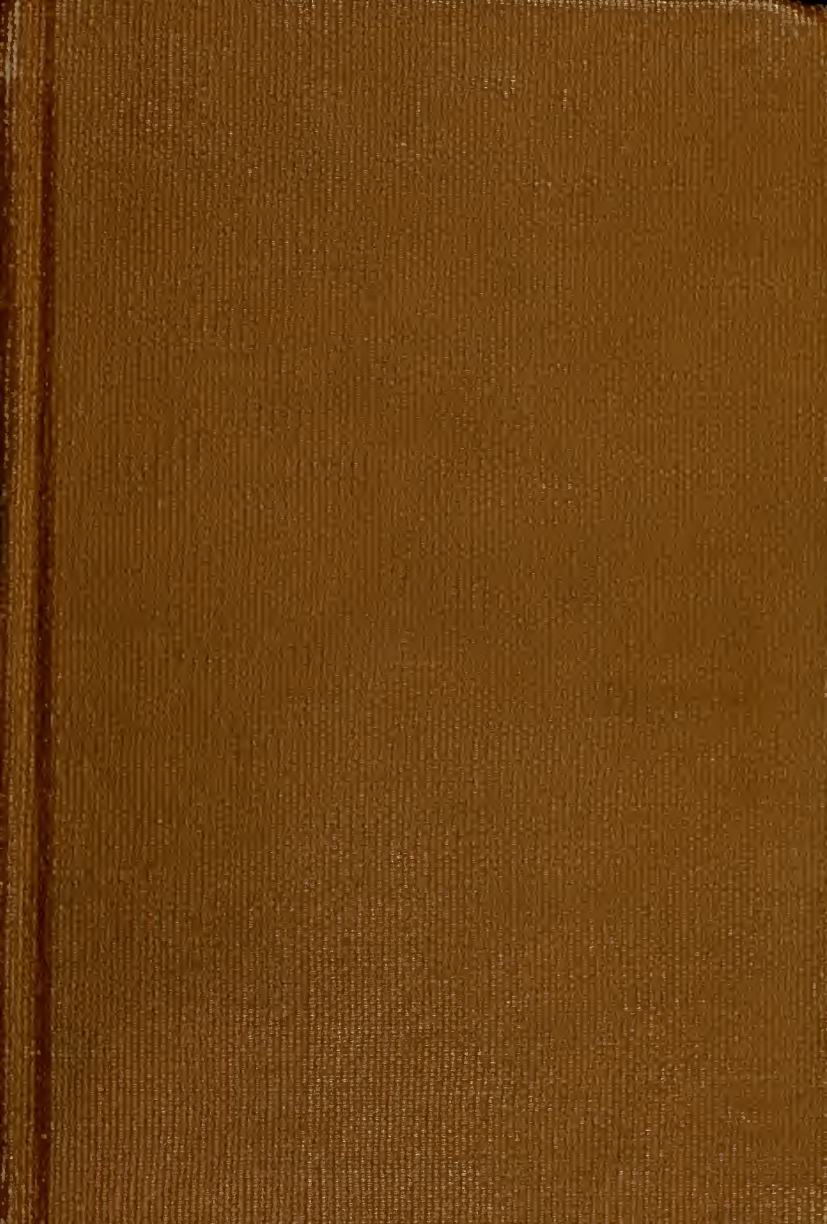




Gc
974.702
Sa8b
1147130

M

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01150 3577



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

THE EARLY
HISTORY OF SAUGERTIES,

New York

1660-1825

BY

BENJAMIN MYER BRINK

That our Children may be Patriots
we tell them of our Fathers

WITH SIXTEEN ILLUSTRATIONS

KINGSTON, N. Y.
R. W. ANDERSON & SON

1902

Copyright, 1902, by
BENJAMIN MYER BRINK.

All rights reserved.

1147130

TO THOSE OLD FRIENDS
NOW CONSTITUTING
Saugerties Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution,
WHO WITH HIM ARE
DESCENDANTS OF THE SAME SIRES, WHO, IN
THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION
GAVE THEIR
LIVES, THEIR FORTUNES, AND THEIR SACRED HONOR
TO SECURE THE
CIVIL AND RELIGIOUS LIBERTY
WE ENJOY,
THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED
BY
THE AUTHOR.

PREFACE.

At the request of Saugerties Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, the author has attempted to tell the story of the settlement and development of the town of Saugerties, basing this work upon papers contributed at various times to the press.

He would acknowledge the assistance given him by that chapter, not only so far as it has been personal, but more than this in its cultivation of a spirit of true patriotism which more than justifies its existence as the world may thus know that its very being calls attention to all our ancestors struggled for, suffered and sacrificed that they and their children might be forever free.

He has attempted to tell how those ancestors lived their simple and sincere lives ; to set forth their manners, customs and pleasures ; to record how they developed their young men and maidens into men and women physically, mentally and spiritually, and built the township we love.

He has attempted to gather up their old Dutch ballads, folk songs, riddles, nursery rhymes and nonsense verses before it is forever too late. This has never been done, and it can not be done by the next generation. He here expresses his indebted-

edness to the many friends whose assistance was indispensable.

In selecting the subjects for the illustrations he has chosen those alone which are connected with the town history. He attempted to secure a picture of the first physician, but failed; and substituted his residence instead. The typical Dutch farm house is inserted because it is typical. No portrait of pastor Kocherthal exists, nor of the West Camp church. The monumental tablet is given instead. The house of Christian Myer is included for the reason that the home of the family from which came eighteen Revolutionary soldiers should be held in everlasting remembrance. The first minister (except Kocherthal) and the first merchant, with his residence and store, are included; but the first lawyer could not be. There was none until shortly before the date at which this story stops. And the author regrets that the book has not reached the standard of his wishes, efforts and intentions.

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER	PAGE
I. Introductory and Descriptive	1
II. A Decisive Battle	7
III. The Earliest Records	14
IV. The Coming of the Palatines	27
V. The Palatines at the Camp	34
VI. The Palatines Find Homes	42
VII. The West Camp Church	50
VIII. The Palatine Leader	55
IX. Sixty Formative Years	60
X. Saugerties Village Before the Revolution	67
XI. Katsbaan Before the Revolution	75
XII. Cedar Grove Before the Revolution	83
XIII. Churchland and Plattekill Before the Revolution	89
XIV. Saxton and Asbury Before the Revolution	96
XV. Malden and West Camp Before the Revolution	104
XVI. Glasco and Flatbush Before the Revolution	111
XVII. The Legion of Honor	118
XVIII. The Revolutionary War	126
XIX. Continuation of the Tappen Journal	133
XX. The Campaign of 1776	140
XXI. The Campaign of 1777	147
XXII. The Campaigns of 1778 and 1779	156
XXIII. Patriotic Divines	163
XXIV. An Indian and Tory Raid	168
XXV. In Captivity in Canada	177

XXVI.	Captain Snyder's Escape	183
XXVII.	After the Revolution	191
XXVIII.	Educational Conditions After the Revolution	197
XXIX.	The Country Doctor	203
XXX.	The Old Farm Houses	210
XXXI.	Farm Life in Olden Time	218
XXXII.	The Indispensable Loom	226
XXXIII.	Social Life in Olden Time	232
XXXIV.	Interesting Documents of the Revo- lution	239
XXXV.	The Katsbaan Church	245
XXXVI.	The Beaver Creek	257
XXXVII.	The Days of Sloops	262
XXXVIII.	The Trip of the Clermont	268
XXXIX.	The Formation of the Town	275
XL.	Beginning to Grow	283
XLI.	Building the Factories and Open- ing the Quarries	291
XLII.	Military Leaders	299
XLIII.	The Saugerties Bard	310
XLIV.	"Katsbaan"	316
XLV.	Old Dutch Ballads, Rhymes and Folk Songs	324
XLVI.	Saugerties Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution	346
APPENDIX—		
	Saugerties Soldiers of the Revolution	349
	The Graves of the Patriots	353

ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE
Site of Old Sawyer's Mill	6
Ravine Where the Indians Fought	11
The Oldest House in Town	24
The Kocherthal Tablet	57
The Post Tavern	72
The Katsbaan Church of 1732	76
The Persen Residence and Store	80
The Cedar Clipje	96
Steene Herte and Fountain	101
The House of Major Dan Wolven	106
Field Where Capt. Snyder was Captured	168
Residence of Dr. Kiersted	208
A Typical Dutch Farm House	215
Cornelius Persen	229
Rev. George Wilhelmus Mancius	247
House of Christian Myer	359



THE EARLY HISTORY OF SAUGERTIES.

CHAPTER I.

INTRODUCTORY AND DESCRIPTIVE.

The town of Saugerties is the northeast town of Ulster county, New York, and extends from the centre of the channel of the Hudson river to the brow of the Catskills. Its northern limit is the boundary line with Greene county, and on the south the town of Ulster where the Plattekill empties into the Esopus. Its area is about 30,000 acres, and its population was in 1900 9,754. This had decreased in the preceding twenty-five years from 10,934 in 1875.

The town was organized from the town of Kingston, April 5, 1811, and is thus of the Nineteenth Century. But for more than one hundred and twenty-five years preceding it had been a large factor in what constituted the town of Kingston, and Katsbaan and West Camp were known throughout the colonies before the Revolution; the latter as the scene where was colonized the first German emigra-

tion to America in 1710, in an ill starred project of the British Government for the production of naval stores, which failed, and the former as the location of a widely-known country store, so widely, in fact, that Burgoyne had selected Katsbaan as the site of one of his three camps between Albany and Kingston upon his intended march from the former city to New York. The others were Kack's Hackey (Coxsackie) and Katskill (Leeds). It is needless to add that some men from Katsbaan assisted in dissuading him at a meeting they had with Burgoyne at Saratoga.

The town occupies two distinct plateaus. The lower one extends from the hills along the Hudson to the mountain ridge, two peaks of which are respectively Mt. Airy and Mt. Marion. This ridge divides the town from north to south into two nearly equal portions.

The eastern plateau lies upon strata of sandstone and shale along its eastern border, with limestone ledges farther west. All these extend in a northerly and southerly direction. The upper, or western plateau lies upon a foundation of greywacke, commercially known as blue-stone, which has been for three-fourths of a century the source of the chief industry of the town.

The town is well watered. Along the whole of its eastern border flows the Hudson.

Through the southern half come the waters of the Esopus creek which have proceeded from their source in the heart of the Catskills for many miles in a southeasterly direction until they were free from the confinement of the mountains. When they reached the fertile plain in the town of Marbletown they coursed due north for thirty miles to Saugerties village, where, after watering as productive fields as the sun shines on, they empty into the Hudson. Through parts of the northwestern portion of the town the Cauterskill carries the rainfall of the Catskills to the river, and through the western part the Plattekill performs the same service. The Beaver drains the upper and lower plateaus in a ten mile course, and in the northeast the little, though historic Saw creek does like duty. It is a peculiarity that all of these streams except the Plattekill and Saw creek flow north.

It is contemplated in this history to tell the story of the settlement of the town and its growth; to show the nationality and character of those who were the pioneers, and from whom the people of the town descended until its development into a manufacturing centre upon the purchase of its immense water power at Saugerties in 1825. In carrying out this intention the first important event will be the coming of the Palatines in 1710 and the story of the

two churches which they founded at West Camp and Katsbaan; the second, the service of townsmen in the French and Indian War, and the third, the story of their connection with the fight for our civil liberties. In this connection it may be said that the dangers to the patriot cause from the invasion of Burgoyne in 1777 called into military service in the field during the summer and autumn of that year practically the whole male population, young and old, of the town capable of bearing arms. Even men who had been Tories at the beginning of the war were compelled to assist or leave the country. A few families did so and went to Canada. A few more remained loyal to the British Crown, but the most of those who had been opposed to the cause of the patriots in 1775 became, under the stress of events, at least nominal patriots. This will explain why names of certain Tories are found on the list of the patriots who served in the army.

This town was included in the charter given to Kingston in 1667, and when, on the 19th day of May, 1687, Gov. Dongan issued the patent for the grant of the large territory to the freeholders of the town of Kingston in trust, which was for more than one hundred years known as "The Kingston Commons," it comprised all the town of Saugerties south and

west of Sawyer's creek, with the exception of the four Meals and Hayes patents, until the bounds of the great Hardenbergh patent were reached at the foot of the Catskill mountains. Thus most of the early settlers derived the titles to their farms and homes from the trustees of Kingston Commons.

Although a part of the town of Kingston, this town did not participate in its Indian troubles of 1655 to 1663. There is no certainty of any permanent settler within the borders of the town of Saugerties at that time. The question of "the old sawyer," or "little sawyer," will be taken up in a subsequent chapter. But aside from him there is no record of a settler within this town before 1688, when Cornelius Lambertsen Brink acquired lands on the southern border of the town at the junction of the Plattekill and Esopus, and built the stone house still standing. He had been a captive taken at the massacre at Esopus (Kingston) in 1663. With twenty-two others he was rescued after a captivity among the savages of just three months.

Nor were there any Indian troubles within the town except when, during the Revolution, the savages were incited by the Tories. Permanent settlement was not made until after the treaties between the Indians and colonial Governors Stuyvesant and Andros had extin-

guished all Indian titles, and thus the early settlers were able to live without the dread of a midnight attack by a savage foe with all the horrors of the tomahawk and scalping knife.

Indian villages did not exist within the borders of the town. It was a sort of neutral ground between the Katskill Indians on the north and the Esopus Indians on the south. Evidences such as arrowheads, knives and axes of stone are continually found here which show it to have been in their occupancy. The journal of Capt. Martin Cregier in 1663 tells of the Indian maize plantation just north of the present village of Saugerties, and there are other evidences about town that Indians were often here. It is safe to say that no permanent Indian village existed within the limits of the town of Saugerties.

In the earlier chapters of those to follow much will appear concerning an "old sawyer," or a "little sawyer" who is only known by that appellation. He had a sawmill at the mouth of the little stream still known as the Saw creek, and by the Dutch his mill was spoken of in the possessive case as "de zaagertje's," or the sawyer's. From this came the name of the stream on which his mill was erected, then of the locality, in time of the town and lastly of the village.



SITE OF OLD SAWYER'S MILL.



CHAPTER II.

A DECISIVE BATTLE.

"The Journal of the Esopus War," by Capt. Martin Cregier, describes the destruction of Wiltwyck (Kingston) by the Esopus Indians in 1663, the capture of many of the women and children, and the military expedition that effected their release. A detachment of the command, under Sergeant Niessen (Niese), proceeded to Saugerties, while the main force under Capt. Cregier tracked the savages and their captives up the Wallkill valley. Capt. Cregier's "Journal" says of Niessen's detachment:

"July 12, 1663. Sergeant Niessen returned with his troops bringing one squaw and three children which they had captured. Examined the squaw. She answered that some Kattskill Indians lay on the other side near the Sager's Kill, but they would not fight with the Dutch. On the 16th, some Mohawks arrived and went to see the Esopus Indians, and fetched from them some captive Dutch women." There is a text for a long sermon here. It is one incident in a story which had begun forty-five

years before, and was to be continued one hundred years more until the power of France on this Continent would be overthrown under Montcalm at Quebec by the British under Wolfe. A crisis in that long struggle culminated on the borders of our town of Saugerties. It is necessary to go back to the days of Hudson to see why the Katskill Indians would not fight the Dutch, and the Mohawks compelled the Esopus Indians to release their Dutch captives.

In August, 1609, Henry Hudson discovered the beautiful river which bears his name and ascended it as far as Waterford. While he was prosecuting his voyage Samuel de Champlain in Canada was carrying on the work begun by Jacques Cartier, and had just discovered lovely Lake Champlain, and was proceeding south upon its waters. Thus representatives of these two nations of Europe almost met. Almost, but not quite. Champlain retired to Quebec and Hudson returned to Europe to report to his employers. A trading company was formed in Amsterdam to prosecute the trade for furs along the river and a trading post was established about four miles south of Albany, and here the Dutch unconsciously prepared for the death grapple which their successors, the English, would have with the French for one hundred and fifty years until the Continent

became the home, not of absolutism, but of freedom, by a masterly act of John Jacob Eelkens in 1618.

In the opening lines of "The Song of Hiawatha" Longfellow sings :

" In the vale of Tawasentha,
In the green and silent valley,
There he sang of Hiawatha."

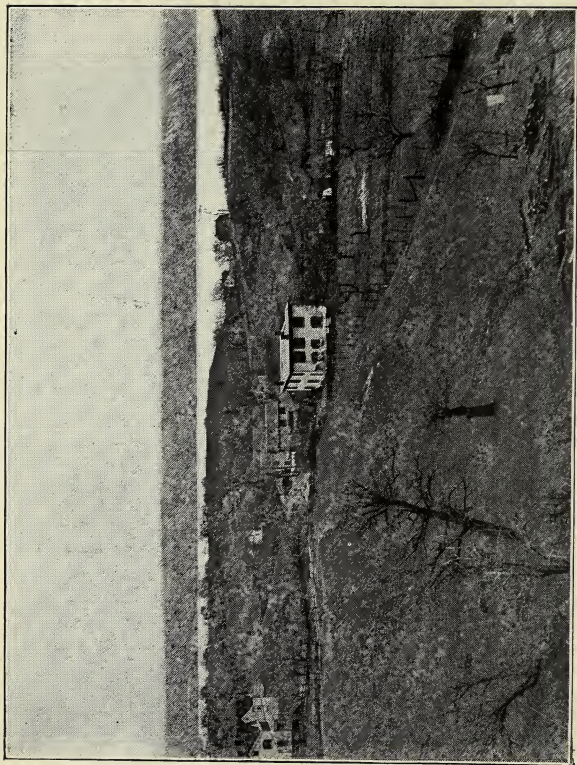
This green valley was on the west side of the Hudson, six miles south of Albany, at what is now Norman's Kill. And here in the spring of 1618, Eelkens, the commander of the trading post, assembled the representatives of the Five Nations and entered into a treaty of peace and amity with them which was never broken, though troubles and difficulties often arose. And to this amity the English succeeded upon the passing of the province into their hands and the French, despite all their efforts, could never detach them, or weaken that friendship. In the words of representatives of these Indian tribes in 1737, one hundred and nineteen years after this, addressed to the English Governor of this province "In ancient times when our fore-fathers first met at this place we will tell you what happened before there was a house in this place, when we lodged under the leaves of the trees, the Christian and we entered into a covenant of

friendship." John Fiske says of this treaty that "It was never violated or seriously infringed. The Five Nations were all more or less steadfast allies of the Dutch, and afterwards of the English until 1763."

The Indians of North America belonged to two great families, the Iroquois and the Algonquin peoples. The seat of the former was the Mohawk valley and the lake region of New York. The five nations, or tribes, were savage and powerful warriors and dominated the Continent. The tribes of the Hudson and of New England and Canada were Algonquins. But the aggressive Iroquois were forcing them into subjection and at last became their tributary lords.

Early in 1628 the Mohegans of the upper Hudson, the Hoosic and the Hoosatonic valleys were driven from their haunts by the Mohawks and an Indian war was begun. To resist their aggressions the Mohegans had allied themselves with the Catskill tribe and the Esopus Indians and with other scattered bands along the upper waters of the Delaware and Schoharie. But the terrible Maquas, or Mohawks, had pressed down the Catskill creek from Schoharie on frequent raids. At last the Mohegans intrenched themselves at the junction of the Cauterskill and Catskill creeks and built another fort at Jefferson Flats, west of Catskill. These





RAVINE WHERE THE INDIANS FOUGHT.

forts were stockades of logs set close to each other perpendicularly in the ground, and they remained long after the Dutch had settled the region.

Tidings of their purpose and of their preparations for defense reached the Mohawks and they determined once for all to subdue the river Indians. Down the Catskill creek from Schoharie they descended upon the Mohegans at their forts. The fighting was fierce and the Mohegans were driven out. A stand was next made at the spring along the Saugerties road to Catskill just where the watering-trough is standing above the Embocht school house. But the onset of the Mohawks was irresistible. They were driven down to the present Ulster county line and took refuge on Wanton Island in the Hudson, recently the site of the National Ice Company's ice house. Here they fought with the energy of desperation and the Mohawks were unable to dislodge them. The Mohawks withdrew and built their camp-fires quite a distance at one side and appeared to be thoroughly discomfited. The Mohegans were deceived into abandoning the island to fall upon their enemies, who, finding them at last on the main land, and taking them in flank and rear along the road to the present Smith's Landing, and in the ravine just east of the old Connelly blacksmith shop, fell upon them

at dead of night with unearthly cries and with fearful slaughter. Most were killed and many were made prisoners. The power of the river Indians was forever broken and the Iroquois dominated the Continent. The tribes of New England and Canada submitted and an annual tribute of wampum and dried clams was exacted by the conquerors.

Regularly every year this was collected. Two Indians would start from the Mohawk castle, proceed down the river of that name to the mouth of the Schoharie, paddle up that stream to its upper waters, then carry their birch bark canoe by a short portage to the upper waters of the Esopus creek and follow that stream to its mouth at Saugerties, collecting tribute as they went. Such was the prowess of the fearful Iroquois that no one molested the embassy. From Saugerties they paddled up the Hudson either to Roelof Jansen's Kill (Livingston creek) and ascended that stream, or followed the Hudson to the Hoosic river above Troy and entered the country of the New England Indians from thence. But wherever they went they were received with respect founded on the fear their reputation inspired.

Many were the efforts made by the French to detach them from the Dutch and English. But down to the day in 1763, when Montcalm and Wolfe both went to the grave at Quebec

and the flag of France on this Continent was forever furled, these efforts were unavailing. Did Gov. Stuyvesant or Gov. Andros negotiate a treaty with the Esopus Indians at Kingston? Some Mohawk chieftain was present to approve, or not. Did the Indians about New York city confer with the colonial authorities? An Iroquois chief was there. Did New England officials negotiate with red men? The consent of the Maquas was necessary. No wonder that the captive Katskill Indian told Capt. Creiger that her people would not fight the Dutch. Thus though Saugerties was neutral ground nevertheless on its borders occurred a battle of tremendous consequence to the future of America in its coming fight for freedom.

CHAPTER III.

THE EARLIEST RECORDS.

In the preceding chapter it is said that a squaw informed Sergeant Niessen and his troops that "some Kattskill Indians lay on the other side near the Sager's Kill, but they would not fight with the Dutch." This is the earliest mention of the Sawyer's creek in the old records and is under the date of July 12, 1663. It establishes the fact that the sawyer from whom the town took its name had had a mill there long enough before 1663 to name the little stream.

The Indian treaties with Governors Stuyvesant in 1658 and 1664, and Nicolls in 1665 had extinguished the titles of the red men to the lands at Kingston and to the west and south of that place. The time had arrived when this should be done to the territory north. Therefore, in the spring of 1677, Governor Sir Edmund Andros summoned the Esopus Indians to a conference at Kingston with himself and the magistrates of the town. The meeting was held on the 27th of April, 1677, and the following is the official account of the proceedings:

CONFERENCE BETWEEN GOVERNOR ANDROS AND
THE ESOPUS INDIANS.

Kingston, the 27th of April, 1677.

Present—His Honor the Governor, Capt. Salisbury, Capt. Chambers, Mr. West and the Magistrates, and Geo. Davit, Interpreter.

His Honor, the Governor, asked the Esopus Sachems, Sewerakan, Pomerewague, Kaelcop, Ankrop and the majority of the Esopus Indians, women as well as men and youths, whether they had any claims upon the land, occupied by us in pursuance of the agreement made with His Honor, Governor Nicolls. They went out and after some time spent in deliberation, Kaelcop said that they did not think they had sold land so far North, but they were well satisfied we should have it provided His Honor would give him a blanket, a shirt and a loaf of bread. The Governor then inquired whether it would satisfy them completely, to which he replied, "Yes, but if His Honor would add a piece of cloth it would be well." He and the Sachems and all the other Indians were told to point out, or describe the boundaries as they were to be now. They described them as follows:—Beginning at the Ronduyt Kil, thence to a Kil called Kahakasnik North along the hills to a Kil called Magowasinginck, thence to the second fall, Easterly to Frudeyachkanieck on the "Groote Revier," along the river South to Ronduyt Kil, with everything lying within these boundaries, good and bad, hills, valleys, waters, etc.

Kaelcop further declared that he had ceded to the old sawyer his claim upon a kil called the Sawyer's Kil, and the land stretching up to the boundary of the land belonging to the Katskil Indians along the river as far as the mountains above.

Whereupon His Honor, the Governor, asked the Sachems and all the other savages, old and young, whether this was so ; they should give a free and fearless answer. They replied it was so and nobody else had any claim upon the land. Questioned once more if they were satisfied with the aforesaid payment they said "Yes, fully." His Honor then gave to Kaelcop in presence of all the others the articles agreed upon as full pay, to wit : A blanket, a piece of cloth, a shirt, a loaf of bread and baize for socks. All being well satisfied, His Honor said he intended to have the boundaries reviewed for better satisfaction and desired Kaelcop and some other Indians to go along and point out the landmarks for which they should receive extra pay. They accepted the proposition with thanks, and said they were ready to go at any time.

Signed,

KAELCOP, for the Amogarickakan family.

ANKEROP, for Kettsypowy.

KUGAKAPO, for the Mahow family.

WENGISWARS, for the Kahatawis family.

PAMIERE WACK, Sachem ; SENERA KAU, Sachem ; MAMARIJ BACKWA, Sachem ; in the name of all Esopus Indians.

In presence of His Honor and the undersigned :

THOMAS CHAMBERS,	HENDRICK JOCHEMSEN,
G. HALL,	JORIS DAVIT,
JOOST,	SYLVESTER SALISBURY,
DIRCK SCHEPMOES,	WILL RODENEY,
E. WHITTAKER,	JOHN WEST,
WESSEL TENBROECK,	N. DEMEYER.

Testis,

WM. LA MONTANYE, Sec'y.

Thus is recorded in this Indian treaty of 1677 the fact that "the old sawyer" had secured an Indian title to the Saw creek not only, but to the land stretching from it to the lands of the Katskill Indians, and as far back as the mountains. The Indians always respected the treaty, and no trouble with the whites ever arose over the lands thus conveyed. So this old sawyer, so far as Indian title could make him, became the largest landholder the town ever had. At least 15,000 acres must have been conveyed him. But there is nothing to show that he ever sought confirmation of his title from the colonial authorities, and in fact no one knows the name of him who gave the name to the town of Saugerties. Nor has any investigation ever disclosed when he secured this Indian grant, nor when he first came here. Cregier's Journal shows the stream thus named fourteen years before the Andros treaty, or in 1663, so that he must have been here as early as the first settlement of Kingston. For this sawmill must have been there long enough before that date to have named the little stream. The date mentioned there, July 12, 1663, is the earliest mention of Sager's creek in any record. The entry in that "Journal" is given in the last chapter.

On the 28th of August, 1683, Col. Thomas Dongan arrived in New York to be governor

of the colony. In a few days he issued writs for the choice of representatives of the freeholders in a general assembly. On the 17th of October, 1683, this assembly met. It was the first meeting of representatives of the people in a legislative assembly in the colony of New York. At this first meeting of a legislature one of the first acts was to divide the province into counties, and twelve were created. One of these was Ulster. Its description includes these words "all the village neighborhoods and Christian habitations on the west side of the Hudson river from the Murderer's Creek to the Sawyer's Creek," thus having its southeast limit at the mouth of the creek entering the Hudson just above Cornwall, at the Highlands; and its northeast in the present village of Saugerties where the Saw creek empties into the same river. Before the date of the organization of Ulster county, November 1, 1683, there is no record of a conveyance of land and, presumptively, no settler.

This was not to remain so long. On the 15th of April, 1685, George Meals, a resident of Albany, and Richard Hayes a resident of Kingston, and both in the British service, secured from the colonial authorities four considerable parcels of land in the town of Saugerties, the patents not being issued until May, 1687. One of these was for a swamp of three

hundred acres, now known as "The Big Vly," situate in the north of the town and lying partly in Albany (now Greene) county. Another was situate on "The Old Kings Road" along the Beaver creek, containing the farm known as the Kemble place, and was of two hundred and fifty-two acres; the third lay just north of the present village of Saugerties, on both sides of the Sawyer's creek, and contained two hundred and one acres and the fourth, the largest of all, was on both sides of the Esopus creek at its mouth and contained four hundred and forty-one and three-fourths acres. It was described to be at a place "called The Sagier's." The bounds began on the Hudson just taking in the falls at the mouth of the Saw creek and proceeded in a direct line along the present Division street of Saugerties village to about the present bridge below the Geo. W. Washburn place which spans the Tannery brook. From thence it crossed the Esopus in a direct line and ascended the hill to a point just west of the Richard C. Washburn place. From thence it proceeded in a straight line until near the southerly bounds of the cemetery on Barclay Heights and thence to the river. November 22, 1687, George Meals and Sarah, his wife, conveyed all their interest in the patent to his partner, Richard Hayes, and on the same day Hayes sold his interest in this

patent, so far as the south side of the creek was concerned, and also in the Big Vly, to John Wood. And on Oct. 1, 1694, Sarah, wife of the late George Meals, conveyed to Wood the interest her husband and she had in the same and which he in his lifetime had sold to Wood.

Then Richard Hayes and Goodwith, his wife, sold the remainder of the village patent to John Hayes, and on August 16, 1712, he conveyed the same to John Persen. So far there had been no settlement on this tract. John Persen became a settler. He built a grist mill, established a ferry across the Esopus and in his will, in 1748, bequeathed house, lands, mill, negro slaves etc. to his wife. His daughter, Vannitje, was the wife of Myndert Mynderse who built the stone house on his estate which is now the residence of F. T. Russell, whose wife is a descendant. But up to the date of the purchase by Persen (1712) there is no evidence of any settler in the bounds of the village. This date is subsequent to the coming of the Palatines to West Camp, Oct. 4, 1710. The records of conveyances of real estate show that none of the Palatines settled in this village until some years later. So it seems clear that John Persen was the first settler within its bounds, unless the nebulous sawyer be excepted. John Persen was born in Kingston where he was baptized Sept. 2, 1683. He was the son

of Sergeant Jan Hendricks Persen of the New Netherland army and Annetje Mattys, his wife. Both came to Kingston from Albany. John Persen married Anna Catryna Post, daughter of Jan Jansen Postmael spoken of below. Cornelius Persen, who kept the store in Katsbaan, was a grand nephew of John.

On May 19, 1687, the same month in which the Meals and Hayes patents were issued, Gov. Dongan granted a large territory of land to "the Inhabitants and Freeholders of the town of Kingston" for their benefit. This tract practically covered the present towns of Esopus, Ulster, Kingston and Saugerties, except what lay northeast of the Saw creek in the last-named town, for the triangle between that creek and the river in which is now West Camp and Malden was then part of Albany county. The patent ordained and declared said inhabitants and freeholders a body corporate and politic with succession forever, with full power to hold and convey real estate and personal property of every kind, and to sue and be sued in the corporate name, and provided for an annual election on the first Tuesday of March of twelve trustees, to hold office for one year. Thenceforth all applications for lands within the present town of Saugerties west of the Saw creek were to be made to the trustees of Kingston Commons instead of the colonial authorities.

Now who was the first settler in this town? In 1763 upon the whole territory north of the Esopus and within the village corporation of to-day there were less than a dozen families viz: Wilhelmus Burhans, Myndert Mynderse, Isaac Post, Egbert Schoonmaker, Samuel Schoonmaker, Hiskia Du Bois, Jan Post, Abraham Post, Petrus Myer, Johannes Myer and Jacobus Post. The most numerous of these families are the Posts. They were descended from Jan Jansen Postmael, spoken of above, who emigrated from Harlingen, in Friesland, Holland; married Jannitje Le Sueur, daughter of Francois Le Sueur, and settled in Harlem, New York. Afterwards he came to Kingston where his son married Cornelia Ysselsteyn in 1702. Their son Abraham, born in 1708, married Maria, daughter of Myndert Schutt, who had the patent north of Malden which will be described in a subsequent chapter, and Myndert Schutt had married Sarah, a sister of John Persen spoken of above. The Post families of the town were descended from Abraham, who was not born until 1708, and whose parents lived in Kingston. The first conveyance of land to Abraham Post bears date Feb. 28, 1735.

Wilhelmus Burhans obtained his property in 1740 from the Meals patent. He was the father-in-law of John Brink, Jr., and this place

was known as the Brink place until very recently. It was at the mouth of the Saw creek on the Hudson and was the site of the mill of "the old sawyer." Myndert Mynderse obtained his property, as said above, through the deed to his father-in-law, John Persen in 1712; Egbert Schoonmaker's deed is dated Jan. 6, 1756; Samuel Schoonmaker's dates to March 4, 1734; Hiskia Du Bois, March 2, 1722; while Petrus and Johannes Myer were descendants of the Palatines of October, 1710.

Passing over the town the same conditions prevail. Aside from those of Palatine origin, and thus Germans and not earlier than 1710 there were the following early Dutch settlers: Harmanus Hommel on the Luther Myer farm in Hommelville, March 4, 1727; Evert Wynkoop at the same date bought what is now the Rio Alto Stock Farm; and Arie Newkirk bought a part of the Meals and Hayes tract along the Old Kings Road on the same day. Nicholas Trumpbour purchased the Evert Sax farm in Katsbaan March 3, 1735; Coenraedt Reghtmyer the Winne farm in Katsbaan Feb. 24, 1738, and Hermanus Reghtmyer the present Rightmyer farm in Katsbaan in the same year.

One of the earliest deeds given by the trustees of Kingston Commons was of a small place on the Old Kings Road to Johannes Minqua

(or John the Minqua, or Mohegan), which suggests that he may have been a full, or at least a half-blood Mohegan, or Delaware Indian. The deed is dated March 1, 1715.

There are no grants of land preceding the date of the Palatines (1710), except the Brink patent at Mt. Marion; the Paulison, the Traphagen and the Winne grants. Of these the Traphagen and the Paulison grants were sold; the Winne grant was made in 1692 and that of Brink, which was the earliest of all and made Feb. 6, 1688. This is the oldest grant in the town except the Meals and Hayes patents which precede it by about eight months. It is stated in a former chapter that Cornelius Lambertsen Brink immediately built upon his land the old stone house which still stands upon the hill just north of the covered bridge over the Plattekill at the town of Ulster line, and much of the tract is still in the possession of Charles Brink, a descendant.

As a summary of this investigation it appears to the writer that the first actual settler of the town of Saugerties, aside from the undetermined "old sawyer," was his great-great-great-grandfather, Cornelius Lambertsen Brink, who came into this town about February 6, 1688.

Thus the year 1700 saw but two settlers within the limits of the town, Cornelius Lam-



THE OLDEST HOUSE IN TOWN.

bertsen Brink and Petrus Winne, unless the sawyer was still living here. Who was he? Jonathan W. Hasbrouck, who spent many years gathering materials for a history of Ulster county, which he never completed, speaks of a Jacob Pietersen who lived at Saugerties about 1660, but does not give authority. He may have been, if he ever existed, the sawyer. The Seventeenth Century closed and a decade of the Eighteenth passed without another conveyance of land within the bounds of the town of Saugerties. It is probable that some trapper may have made a temporary home in the wilderness which he shifted as game appeared more plenty elsewhere. The trustees disposed of the land on such easy terms that it was not difficult to acquire homes and farms. Still, before 1710, but few were applied for.

In connection with the sawyer another question arises: "For whom did the sawyer saw?" A sawmill is not constructed to have its product used, or consumed, solely by its owner living under primitive conditions in an unsettled wilderness. The Indian chief, Kaelcop, speaks of him, as before stated, as being here in 1677, while Capt. Cregier mentions Sager's creek in 1663, fourteen years previously, and twenty-four years before the Meals and Hayes patents and fifty years before John Persen settled in this village and built the grist mill on the

Esopus. There were no roads at that early date as the Old Kings Road, the earliest in the town, was the "ffootpath to Albany" as late as 1670 and not laid out as a road until 1703. It has been said that he sawed for Livingston, the first proprietor of Livingston Manor. But this Livingston was not born until 1654 and received his grant in 1686 which was by royal charter erected into a manor in 1715. And any one who knows the conditions of the Hudson at the mouth of the Saw creek would hardly claim that the product of a saw mill could be readily shipped in anything but a flat-bottomed scow. The sawyer is mysterious and his customers seem mythical, but his existence seems a sufficiently attested fact.

CHAPTER IV.

THE COMING OF THE PALATINES.

As the year of our Lord 1710 was drawing to its close there seems to have been but two families settled within this town, both of whom were living on the southern border on the Esopus creek and the Plattekill. Since Petrus Winne had obtained his grant in 1692 no one had sought and secured a home within the limits of this town. During those twenty years its solitudes remained unbroken. Kingston on the south slowly added to its population, and Katskill (Leeds) on the north had had an untroubled existence and quiet growth since 1644. But it was still the smallest of hamlets. Between the two settlements lay the primitive wilderness and at the time of which we speak almost untrodden by the red sons of the forest. Their titles had been extinguished for a third of a century, yet their successors seemed in no hurry for its possession. In truth the whites who could settle were very few. Emigration, which had but just begun to any extent at the close of Dutch supremacy, had not yet awakened under their British successors. In Octo-

ber, 1710, it was to come in as a flood, and the present northeast corner of both the town of Saugerties and the county of Ulster was to be the scene. At that date, and for fifty years longer, this spot was part of the county of Albany (Greene) county. But as it was added to Ulster in 1767, and is still in this county its history will be treated as the history of the town of Saugerties. For in October, 1710, the colony of Palatines came to East Camp and West Camp. It was the largest emigration at any one time in colonial days, and it brought into Ulster county a colony of Germans to become pioneers and founders with the Dutch in Kingston, and the French in New Paltz.

Who were the Palatines? Whence came they, and why? They came from their homes on the sunny, castled Rhine along which history has been made since civilization began. There has always been a "Wacht am Rhein." It has always been the battlefield of Europe. Into the history of the Palatinate this history cannot go. It can only briefly state the causes of the emigration.

There are two Palatinates in Europe, the Upper and the Lower. With the Upper, or Bavarian, this history has no concern. It has to do with the Palatinate of the Rhine, the Lower Palatinate. It might be somewhat indefinitely said to be Alsace and Lorraine of

what was France to 1871, and Wurtemberg and Baden in Germany. Its capital was Heidelberg. Its principal cities were Mayence, Mannheim, Spires and Worms among many other historic ones.

The people were mostly Protestant, and about equally divided between the Lutheran and the Reformed faiths. In 1685, the year the Meals and Hayes grant was made, which was the first step towards the settlement of this town, Louis XIV. revoked the Edict of Nantes, which had given safety to the Huguenots of France, and eighty years of prosperity to that kingdom. At once the flight of the best of Frenchmen began. Tens of thousands fled to the Pfals, as they termed the Palatinate, which name survives in our New Paltz. And the anger of Louis was kindled against the Palatinate where already his covetous eyes had been resting. From that time these beautiful Rhine provinces were almost unceasingly harried by the hosts of France. Lust and rapine stalked rampant through the land. The story of the wars of the Grand Alliance, of the Spanish Succession, or of any of those which during the next twenty years "made the Palatinate a cinder," would be of interest but can not be told here. Every great city on the Rhine above Cologne was taken and sacked. The Elector Palatine, from the walls of Mann-

heim, one day counted no less than twenty-three towns and villages in flames. The brutal soldiers of Louis even broke into the imperial tombs in Spires and scattered the dust and bones of the emperors. Many are the ruins to-day along the castled Rhine which tell of the atrocity of the army of the Grande Monarque.

More than all the people suffered. Frozen corpses lay over the fields, which in life they had plowed and reaped. The conflagration of Chicago did not sweep more insatiably than did the besom of French destruction over this land of the Rhine. Thousands of families were homeless, and in direst straits wandered through Germany, Holland and England. Many permanently settled in those countries, but the years 1708 and 1709 found 13,000 in England still unprovided for. Queen Anne was then on the throne and was first cousin to their Prince. The Palatines never wearied of singing her praises. One day a band of these refugees led by one of their pastors, Rev. Joshua Kocherthal, marched through the streets of London. Their shovel hats, quaint garments and wooden shoes were objects of great curiosity to every observer. Their leader, pastor Kocherthal, was a tall, grave man of mature years. The queen sent for him and he presented a petition for her favor as he, with a

company of forty-one souls, who had taken the oath of allegiance to her, were about to depart for America. She questioned him minutely, and he described himself and his people. She was impressed by his sincerity, ability and force of character and granted his request. He brought his little colony here and settled them on the Hudson where is now the city of Newburgh.

As soon as he saw the colony firmly planted he sailed for England. These few colonists could be cared for. There were thousands more in England who needed him. He had another interview with the queen whose sympathies were aroused, as were those of the court and people. Collections had been taken in the churches for their support. This history will not tell the long story. Nor speak of the serious problem before the government. At last some wiseacre conceived the idea that England, which was entirely dependent upon other nations for naval stores, might produce them herself from the pines upon the Hudson and it was decided upon. Six thousand acres of land were purchased from Robert Livingston on the east side of the river and the Fullerton tract of eight hundred acres on the west side, and towards the end of January, 1710, ten ships, upon which about 3,000 souls embarked, set sail for the Hudson river. After weary

years of death and destruction, after wanderings over Europe the largest exodus that ever took ship to seek a new home sailed away. To what? Before them a vast and stormy wintry sea. Beyond it a vague wilderness and to most of them twenty years more of wandering before final homes were found in Pennsylvania. As the last of the emigrants embarked, a boat was overturned and its occupants were drowned. Then a great storm arose, separated the ships, and for five months these poor exiles were tossed about in their packed vessels during the most inclement of winters with scant provisions and with a mortal sickness on board, beating against adverse winds in search of a home. Before June 13, 1710, when they reached New York, 470 had died. Their voyage was one of the most terrible in history. And they little knew what was worse than all. A semi-serfdom awaited them. These people are usually spoken of as "poor Palatines." And they were. They possessed absolutely nothing materially. Lust, rapine, murder, outrage and war for twenty years had taken care for that. Once they had not been so. Their land had been the garden of Europe. Who that has sung "Bingen on the Rhine" of the Palatines needs such information? And they had more. No one who has ever seen the documents signed by these Palatines needs be told that they

came from lands of school houses. They were the signatures of hands that were used to pens. They came to West Camp Oct. 4, 1710. Bark and log huts were built for winter quarters. Here they shivered and suffered. But they built a church that very winter. And in January, three months after their landing, they had a school house. And it was made of sawed boards. Think what this means! Think what these exiles had passed through! Think where they were! They could keep their weary bodies alive somehow. But mind and soul must have the best obtainable in this howling wilderness. The world has long admired the high ideals the Pilgrims at Plymouth rock had set before them. But the relative needs of body, mind and soul were never more clearly seen, nor more quickly provided for than by these exiles from their home along the sunny Rhine who, in the direst straits of poverty, in semi-serfdom, in mid-winter, while shivering frames lacked nutritious food, first of all built themselves a school and a church.

CHAPTER V.

THE PALATINES AT THE CAMP.

On June 13, 1710, the first of the ten vessels which had sailed from England dropped her anchor in New York harbor. The new governor of the colony, Col. Robert Hunter, came with her, and on June 16, reports that "three of the Palatine ships are wanting, and those that have arrived are in a deplorable condition." And they were. Many cases of contagious diseases were among the colonists. So it was decided to disembark them upon Nutten (now Governors) Island where huts were built for them. Not until the end of July did all the ships report, and even then one had never come farther than the eastern end of Long Island where she went ashore. Her passengers were saved, but the goods were much damaged. Since they sailed from England in the latter part of January, 1710, four hundred and seventy of their number had died at sea and within eighteen months that number had increased until one-fourth of the 3,000 who had embarked had perished.

The death of so many of these emigrants

left more than three hundred widows, single women and children upon Gov. Hunter's hands. The London Board of Trade in their wisdom had decided to send the Palatines to the Hudson river to make naval stores from the pines, and had caused them, on Dec. 21, 1709, to sign a covenant before they sailed by which they agreed to "repay to Her Majesty the full sum, or sums of money in which we are indebted to Her Majesty," by "the production or manufacture of all manner of naval stores." They farther promised not to leave the lands allotted to them on any manner of pretense. For this purpose they had been transported and now Gov. Hunter set about colonizing them.

His first step, after placing the people on Governors Island, was to find the most promising place in which the Palatines could accomplish the desire of the Board of Trade. He immediately dispatched the surveyor-general to the Mohawk river and to Schoharie to locate a site. During his absence he issued an order apprenticing the orphan children around in the province and they were distributed from Livingston's Manor to Long Island. This in those days meant a final separation in most cases. It was the first act of the authorities which embittered the people against the governor. The report of the surveyor-general recommended the settlement of the colony

upon the banks of the Hudson at what became East Camp and West Camp. This was the second of their grievances. They had met in England a deputation of Mohawks from whom they had obtained a promise of lands at Schoharie, and they came to this country believing they were to be sent there. They began to complain that faith was not kept with them. In vain did the governor tell them that Schoharie was on the frontier and could not be well defended; that there were no pines there for the naval stores; that where there were pines there in paying quantities there was no means of transporting the product to navigable waters. They answered that they had been promised lands in Schoharie, and it was a violation of agreement not to be sent there.

The governor was inexorable and about Oct. 1st he bought the land on the east and west sides of the Hudson. He made a contract with Robert Livingston to feed them, and on the sixth of October he began their support. On November 14, 1710, Gov. Hunter writes: "I have just returned from settling the Palatines on Hudson's river. Each family hath a sufficient lot of good arable land, and ships of fifteen foot draught of water can sail as far as their Plantations. They have already built themselves comfortable huts and are now employed in clearing the ground. In the Spring

I shall set them to work in preparing the trees."

The colony was composed of seven villages, the four in East Camp being Hunterstown, Queenstown, Annsbury and Haysbury, and the three in West Camp were named Elizabethtown, Georgetown and Newtown. As stated in the last chapter no sooner had huts to shelter them been constructed than the colony began to erect a church in which the two pastors, Rev. Joshua Kocherthal, the Lutheran, and Rev. John Frederick Hager, the Reformed, officiated. And here for twenty years they lived in religious harmony until those of the Reformed faith built the church at Katsbaan on the west side, and that of Germantown on the east side of the river and left the church at West Camp to the use of the Lutherans of the colony. With the church arose the school. Three months had but just passed when a school house "of sawed boards" is reported, and these poverty-stricken colonists, who protested that their children had been taken from them and apprenticed to strangers, had gathered the rest for instruction under a teacher who is said to have been a man by the name of Johannes Mattice Jung (Young).

In their huts of logs, brush and bark the Palatines passed the winter of 1710-11 shivering and suffering. Tradition, which fixes their

coming on Dec. 24, says that the winter was mild and open and the river did not freeze over. But tradition, as it so often is, is grievously at fault. According to the complaints they made to the government the winter was severe. They suffered greatly from the bitter cold in their huts and tents in the wilderness, and the insufficient clothing furnished. Further than this they charged Livingston with providing food poor in quality, and inadequate in quantity. What ground for these charges there was cannot be ascertained. Nor how far their natural disappointment was a factor. It must be remembered that they had been full of enthusiasm. The queen and the government had been generous to them in England.

But they were now under men who were attempting to make an enterprise financially successful. The English government had invested 8,000 pounds sterling in the scheme. But every future dollar came from the pocket of Gov. Hunter until he had sunk about \$130,000, and when it failed it was never refunded him. The situation of the Palatines was almost destructive of the last trace of enthusiasm not only, but of hope. Unwittingly it may be, but no less surely, they had bound themselves by a covenant to reimburse the cost of their transportation by a serfdom which might last many years; it was the dead

of winter in an inhospitable climate, in a howling wilderness, in sheds of bark and logs, and with many relatives bound out among strangers and from whom they might never learn tidings. This happened in some cases at least. No wonder there was dissatisfaction and complaint. And all this was aggravated by the attitude of the officials placed over them, who carried themselves as masters among slaves.

As the snows disappeared the people began to work preparing the pines for a flow of turpentine. Jean Cast, a Frenchman, who had been left by the governor as his personal representative at the Camp, writes under date of March 14, 1711, "The people are willing to take their share of the salt beef which they hitherto were unwilling to accept. While thus occupied a great many of the settlers came from all the villages to receive the tools sent them from New York; they all without exception evinced a modesty, civility and respect which surprised, as much as it delighted me. They have all exhibited equal readiness to clear and prepare their gardens and have invited me to spend a week with them."

But dissatisfaction increased. It soon became apparent that the project would never succeed. The trees were mostly white pine, and although there were many pitch pines they were but small. The children were set at work

gathering pine knots, of which the forest was full and from them about sixty barrels of tar were made. This seems to have been the sole result of the undertaking. By May, 1711, the murmurs of the people were so persistent that the governor came up to the Camp and found a mutiny brooding. They demanded to be sent to Schoharie and claimed to have been cheated in the contract they signed. He pacified them and returned to New York, but was overtaken before he reached the city with tidings that the mutiny had broken out again. He was compelled to put it down with a force of soldiers. The Palatines returned to their villages and to their tasks. All through the following summer they labored on, resignedly and steadily. They worked at the trees preparing 15,000 a day until over 100,000 had been made ready. But by the winter of 1711-12 their patience was exhausted. Fresh troubles arose. It was upon the same grievances. Still they remained quiet until the spring when the governor ordered from Albany an additional force of a lieutenant and thirty men. From this time the colonists appear to have been under a kind of compulsory servitude, a slavery. No wonder they were in a state of chronic revolt. They tell the story of the preceding winter in a "Statement of Grievances" sent to the king. The winter was "very severe

and no provision to be had and the people bare of clothes, which occasioned a terrible consternation among them and particularly from the women and children the most pitiful and dolorous cries and lamentations that have perhaps ever been heard from any persons under the most wretched and miserable circumstances, so that they were at last, much against their wills, put under the hard and greeting necessity of seeking relief from the Indians."

In April, 1712, some of them upon the east side of the river deserted and crossing sought a refuge among their brethren of West Camp and many passed over to the Dutch across the Sawyer's creek in Ulster county. But the magistrates of Kingston, responding to the demands of the authorities of the Manor, sent them back. They then determined to go to Schoharie and some of them started, but were compelled to return by force. Finally on September 13, 1712, the governor decided that the scheme was a failure and gave permission to the Palatines to shift for themselves.

CHAPTER VI.

THE PALATINES FIND HOMES.

The release of the Palatines from the contract to labor in making naval stores in payment of the cost of their transportation to America was accompanied by the notice that the "contract is still binding and they must return on call." But the failure was so complete that no call was ever made and the colonists became freemen. The Palatines on the Manor took steps at once to secure that freedom. About one-third of those on the east side of the river remained there. The rest migrated to Schoharie. With their troubles in acquiring title to the lands there and their dispersion to the Mohawk and Pennsylvania we have nothing to do here. Nor with the small band that founded Rhinebeck and named it after their loved river in the homeland. We must follow the Palatines of our town.

It is difficult to determine the relative numbers of the colonists on either side of the river. The colony had more than seven times the acreage on the east side that it had on the west side of the Hudson. Cobb's "Story of

the Palatines" takes it for granted that there was almost no tar-making on the west side. But to one familiar with the soil on either side of the river it would seem that the west bank would be a natural home of the pine. The soil fulfils the pine land conditions better. Besides there is direct evidence of tar-making at West Camp. At a meeting of the Palatine commissioners on July 4, 1711, it was resolved that "Every two Palatine Coopers, whereof there are 12 on this (east) side and 4 on the other (west) side of Hudson's river have four Palatines for their assistants, to cut down, saw, and split the timber and assist in making the barrel staves fit for the containing Tarr for Transportation, and that the respective List masters, or heads of Every Village on this side Doe detach 24 men, and 12 men on the other (west) side every munday in their turn * * * and there work till Saturday night." The list masters (foremen) for the west side of the river to supervise the tar-making were for Elizabeth-town, John Christopher Gerlach; for Georgetown, Jacob Manck; for Newtown, Philip Peter Grauberger. But whatever the fact, one thing is beyond dispute. The colonists at West Camp remained where they were. They did not go to Schoharie. The names of those positively known to have been here from the first show that these families are in our town to this

day in their descendants. There is one thing remarkable. Although the purchased lands upon the east shore were so much more than upon the west it seems that the headquarters was on this side. Here was built the church. Here pastor Kocherthal lived, died and was buried. Here the colonists were content to stay.

It is an interesting question what was the number of Palatines who came to the Camp, and how many remained. But it is somewhat difficult to answer. There is a discrepancy in the different accounts of the number of those who sailed from England in January, 1710. The journal of Conrad Weiser gives 4,000. Other accounts state the number at above 3,000. This number is probably nearer the truth. On February 8, 1711, the Lords of Trade report to Queen Anne that the number of Palatines settled at the Camp is 2,227. Of these the names of 82 heads of families, and a total of 257 persons is given as having wintered at West Camp. On March 25, 1711, the subsistence of 1,437 persons is reported. A report made May 1, 1711, says that 1,761 persons were here, of whom 583 are at West Camp. The number given on June 24, 1711, is 1,874, of whom 639 are at West Camp. October 24, 1711, the number at the Camp is only 1,422. The last report of all is made a number

of years after this, and after the exodus to Schoharie, when 680 persons are reported at Schoharie, 232 at West Camp and those at East Camp are 359, with 140 at Rhinebeck. At this time 40 are said to be in Kingston, or probably, Kingston Commons, meaning elsewhere in this town than in the vicinity of West Camp. It is expressly said that no widows or orphans are included in this statement.

In the covenant made between the Board of Trade and the Palatines while in London, a promise was made of an allotment to each person of forty acres of land free of taxes, or rents for seven years from the date of the grant, and to be made at the conclusion of their service. This was never made them. And when they were released and bidden to seek for themselves, most of those at West Camp passed over from the Fullerton patent to the Kingston Commons seeking homes. In another chapter we will see the effect of this upon the church at West Camp for a generation and a half.

Nevertheless some families remained at West Camp and acquired good titles to homes and farms. On Oct. 10, 1715, Gov. Hunter reported that the Palatines who were supporting themselves not only did so very comfortably, but the more industrious really began to make money. On July 7, 1717, he reports that all earn a living and some are grown rich.

There is one quaint estimate of what the colony would need made in November, 1710, a month after the settlement, which, after giving the number of sets of harness, blacksmith's, carpenter's and other tools and implements, says that "some things are wanted forth with, as a church for divine service in each of the settlements; a warehouse in ye same and house for ye officers; 3 pair of millstones; 250 cows and 600 sowes." Also wanted "100 pounds in New York money to pay a Phisitian general, 40 pounds to pay 2 surgeons; 20 pounds to pay 2 schoolmasters. Four nurses are wanted for ye hospital at 216 pence a week. The subsistence of the above will be paid."

A full list of the Palatines who came to New York with Gov. Hunter, in June, 1710, was never made, nor of those who came to the Camp. And the constantly changing numbers increases the difficulty of mentioning them. But the following names of those who settled on the west side of the river are taken from the records, mentioning only those whose descendants are found in this town. Peter Maurer, (Mower), wife and an adult woman; Frederick Mirckle (Markle), wife, 2 lads and 3 girls; Valentine Wolleben (Wolven) and wife; Philip Wolleben; John Becker and son; Albert Dederick Marterstock and wife; John Eberhard; Peter Wolleben, wife and three children; An-

thony Kremer (Cramer); Stephen Frolich (Freligh), wife and 3 children; Gartrud Eikert (Eckert) and 2 children; Peter Becker and wife; Valentine Ffaulkinberg, wife and one child; Wilhelm Muller (Miller); Elizabeth Jung (Young) and 3 children; Elizabeth Bayherin (Bear) and one child; John Michael Emerick and wife; Peter Diebel (Dibble), wife and child; Catherine Schultzin; Christian Myer and wife; Peter Overbach and wife; Hyeronymous Schib (Shoub) and wife. These spent the first winter at West Camp. Among those who came up from New York in the spring of 1711, and during the summer are Palatines by the names of Young, Plank, Bronck, Dederick, Schutt, Newkirk, Eligh, Wanamaker, Valk, Sax, Snyder, Romer, Felton, Hoffman, Schumaker, Hauver, Hagedorn, Schaffer, Keyser, Sagen-dorf, Riffenberg, Linck, Hoff, Winter, Dill, Sharpe and Kieffer. And from those who came in 1708 to Newburgh there came the following: Daniel Fiero, Andreas Valck and Isaac Turck and their families.

It is not within the scope of this history to trace these families along the lines descending from this Palatine stock. Descendants of most are residents of this town to-day. The earliest homes of many of them will be located in subsequent chapters.

So Saugerties received its strongest element

and the most numerous. At this time there was but a handful of settlers within our borders and these were Dutch. Some of the earliest deeds granted were to Palatines. A few Huguenot families were early resident. And one or two English. But this influx of at least two hundred and fifty people was enough to stamp a character upon the community for generations. They were an intelligent people. Their signatures show that they were used to handling a pen. The journal of Weiser is well written. Their first act, which built a school house immediately, proves it. And the next chapter but one will show their leader, Kocherthal, to have been a man of fine education. They were God-fearing, for their earliest record is that they built a church forthwith, as well as a school house. They were liberty loving. Their semi-serfdom was irksome, and only acquiesced in because they felt indebted to the queen and her government for assistance. And they were patriotic. Their record of service for their adopted country is noble. The first winter they sent a company of volunteers for service against the French in Canada. And during the Revolutionary war no patriots were more self-sacrificing than they. Among the apprenticed orphan children, previously spoken of, was one named John Peter Zenger, who, in after years, established a paper in New York

and fearlessly criticised the arbitrary colonial government. He was arrested and imprisoned. His trial and triumphant acquittal established the freedom of the press in America, and would be an interesting story, but it does not particularly relate to the history of our town.

CHAPTER VII.

THE WEST CAMP CHURCH.

No sooner had the Palatines been landed on the shores of the Hudson at the Camp than they took steps to provide a place for the public worship of God. The authorities had been advised that two such buildings be erected, one on either side of the river. But without waiting for the action of the civil authorities the people themselves provided a place at West Camp. And they did this the first winter they were there. It has been often said that pastor Kocherthal was not with the colony at the Camp during the winter of 1710-11. But the baptismal register shows baptisms during these months. If this be answered that he was with the colony at Newburgh and the baptisms were there it is submitted that Jean Cast, writing from West Camp, March 27, 1711, reports a conversation with Kocherthal regarding the repugnance of his flock to the making of tar and other naval stores which unmistakably establishes the fact of his presence there.

The church at West Camp was erected

almost upon the site of the present one. As the colony reached West Camp on or about Oct. 4, 1710, it is probable that divine services were immediately held and have continued from that date, with an exception to be mentioned. The building was erected for the worship of the colony, which was composed of Lutherans and those of the Reformed faith. There were two pastors, the Rev. Joshua Kocherthal, Lutheran, and the Rev. John Frederick Hager, Reformed. Hager resided at East Camp, and we find them jointly reporting the number of families under their charge in 1718. In October, 1715, Hager petitioned Gov. Hunter for leave and help to build a church at East Camp, promising that services should be performed after the liturgy of the Church of England. Nothing resulted from the petition.

Tradition has always held that a bell was presented to the church by Queen Anne which has since disappeared. But it seems that tradition must be in error. The church records kept by Kocherthal do indeed mention the bell given by Her Majesty. But Kocherthal had brought over the Quassaick (Newburgh) colony in 1708, two years before he brought the Camp colony. With the first colony he brought the bell as his records, which cover both colonies, show. They also show that the bell was loaned

to the Lutheran church in New York, where it remained for more than twenty years, when it was brought to Newburgh in 1733. Kocherthal died in 1719, when about to journey once more to England with a Palatine commission to secure the promises covenanted to the colonists. The church was served by Hager for a while and then by the Rev. John Jacob Ehle, Reformed, and the Rev. Daniel Falckner and the Rev. W. C. Berckenmayer, Lutherans, the last a son-in-law of Kocherthal. These services were continued occasionally until 1729. In 1727, the present Reformed Church was organized at Germantown, and in 1730, the Rev. George Wilhelmus Mancius came from Holland to the Camp, and finding most of the colony settled upon lands of the Kingston Commons and worshipping on the Kats Baan became their pastor. In 1732, upon his incitement, they erected the old stone church there. From this time the records cease at West Camp until after the death of Mancius in 1762. In 1765, they began again, and in 1775, the Rev. Philip Groz was settled as pastor in West Camp. The old church was replaced by a new one about 1791-2, and was afterwards rebuilt. In 1871, it was torn down after the erection on a site but a few feet distant of the present beautiful structure.

What was the reason for this long lapse in

the records of the church? A suggestion seems to be in what has been told in this connection. The settlement at West Camp was upon the patent of Thomas Fullerton. This was repurchased by the British government through Gov. Hunter, who advanced \$130,000 towards the naval stores scheme. When the project failed the government would not reimburse Hunter. His money was invested but the sole asset was the property here at the Camp including the Fullerton tract. So there was a cloud on the title to the lands. The Palatines passed over the Sawyer's creek to the Kingston Commons and took up land there. Here there was plenty which could be purchased for not more than \$2.50 per acre, or leased for ten years at a rental of two fat hens per annum and after that time for not more than a peck of wheat per acre with the privilege of purchase at any time. And most of the Palatines availed themselves of the privilege. For many years most of the families resided there and after the Katsbaan church was built worshipped there. For Man-
cius preached in German at Katsbaan, at least at first, and afterwards both in German and Dutch. At his death in 1762 his successors preached in Dutch only. By this time the land question was settled and West Camp had received its proportionate share of settlers. Then a pastor came and the records on the

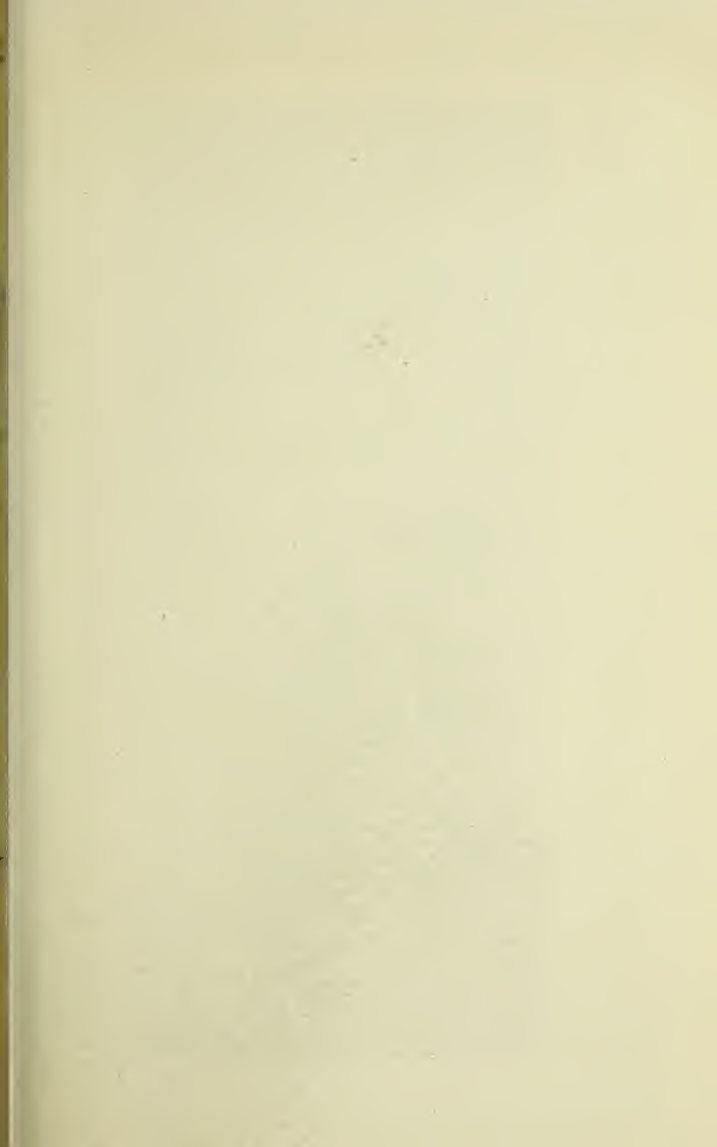
church book are continued. Thus this church at West Camp is the oldest within the present town of Saugerties. From 1765 the services have been regularly held and are to this day. The congregation is large and widely extended. A curious difference has always been manifest between the Palatines holding the Reformed faith in this town and those of the Lutheran. The Reformed intermingled with the Dutch and Huguenot element not only, but built no less than five Reformed churches in different parts of the town, while the Lutheran element intermingled comparatively little, and all remained loyal members of the original church at West Camp wherever they resided.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE PALATINE LEADER.

It remains to speak of the remarkable man who led the exodus from the Palatinate into England and then brought two colonies across the Atlantic to the valley of the Hudson. He was not only the pastor of the flock, but their leader and guide in temporal affairs, their counsellor and friend. He was just in the prime of life, a tall and grave man, scholarly and retiring and of a winsome personality. He impressed all with whom he came in contact, whether the Lords of Trade, or the people of England; whether Queen Anne, or his suffering compatriots. Her Majesty set aside customs in his favor and provided for his support as a clergyman in a communion not of the Church of England. His entries in the records of his church show a poetic soul whom the dark waters of affliction could not overwhelm; a Christian scholar whose interpretation of his varied experiences accorded with a faith which surmounted every obstacle and found every event another proof of the favor of his Master and Friend.

As we have been telling the story of the colony we have given glimpses of his spirit. We will add some matters of his personal record. The Rev. Joshua Kocherthal was born in the year 1669, the year of the birth of his beloved Sibylla Charlotte, as he calls his wife. She accompanied him upon his first voyage which brought the Newburgh colonists, and with them their three children. Two others were born in this country. On their voyage out they came with the fleet bringing Lord Lovelace, the new governor of New York and New Jersey. The weather was tempestuous and they were eleven weeks at sea, reaching New York on New Years Day, 1709, having suffered severely. He left his wife and children in New York on his return to England for the larger emigration and while he was away his fourth child was born. The story of the six months voyage to New York with the 3,000 Palatines in 1710, we have already told, of their hardships, sufferings from fever and storm, their serfdom and final dispersion. In all this their pastor was their constant guide, counsellor and helper. September, 1712, saw the release of the people from their thankless and grinding task at the pines. It also witnessed the breaking up of the pastor's flock. A little over one year more and his beloved Sibylla Charlotte was called away on Decem-



Wille Wacker
 in Ketchikan
 der guen Bayly Charon
 Lin Ketchikan Wacker
 Hoch Ketchikan in Nord Amer
 in Ketchikan
 dardien in der Ost und von Seite
 Der Hudsons River
 ren Ketchikan Prediger
 erste ein hiesig war mit J. Lovelace
 1729 den 1. Januar
 ne Ketchikan mit Col. Hunter
 1730 den 14. Juny
 Englandische ruc reise unterbrach
 e Seelen Ketchikan
 S. Johannes Tage 1719
 herzu mehr Ketchikan
 ter Suche in Ketchikan vaterland
 war de Ketchikan
 Wer Ketchikan
 Wer Ketchikan
 Ketchikan

THE KOCHERTHAL TABLET.

ber 16, 1713, and the pastor was left alone with his five children, the oldest of whom, Benigna Sibylla, was a girl of fifteen years. Faithfully, for six years longer he lived and served in West Camp and shepherding the people of his widely scattered charge. Then the Palatines at Schoharie, along the Mohawk and here on the Hudson, disappointed in not receiving their promised lands, determined to send a committee to London to secure from the government the lands they claimed at Schoharie and asked their pastor to go. He consented, but while preparing, suddenly expired. With reverent hands his affectionate people laid his weary frame to rest in the green field southeast of the church at West Camp and here in 1742, his daughters laid over his grave a large slab of brown stone bearing a quaint German inscription which was written by some one not too familiar with that language, and which, after correcting some manifest errors is as follows:

“Wisse Wandersmann unter diesem Stein ruht nebst seiner Sibylla Charlotte ein rechter Wandersmann der Hoch-Deutschen in Nord Amerika, ihr, Josua, und derselben an der Ost und West Seite des Hudson's river rein Lutherischen Prediger. Seine erste Ankunft war mit Lord Lovelace 1707-8, den 1ten Januar. Seine zweite mit Col. Hunter, 1710, den 14, Juny.

Seine Engländische Rueckreise unterbrach seine Seelen Himmelsche Reise an St. Johanestage, 1719. Begehrst du mehr zu wissen so untersuche in Melancthon's Vaterland wer war der Kocherthal, wer Harschias, wer Winchenbach.

B. Berckenmayer, S. Huertin, L. Brevort.
MDCCXLII."

The three names at the bottom are those of his three daughters Benigna, Susanna and Louisa, and Berckenmayer, Huertin and Brevort were the names of their respective husbands. Who Harschias and Winchenbach were the writer has never learned. The Rev. Philip Lichtenberg, formerly of this village, thus translated the inscription :

"Know, traveller, under this stone rests, beside his Sibylla Charlotte, a real traveller, of the High Dutch in North America their Joshua and a pure Lutheran preacher of the same on the east and west side of the Hudson river. His first arrival was with Lord Lovelace in 1709, the first of January. His second with Col. Hunter, 1710, the fourteenth of June. The journey of his soul to Heaven on St. John's Day, 1719, interrupted his return to England. Do you wish to know more? Seek in Melancthon's Fatherland who was Kocherthal, who Harschias, who Winchenbach?"

But the character of the Palatine leader and his poetic nature are most fully shown in the entries in his own handwriting in the records he kept of baptisms, marriages and the like in his church book. The title page, under date of December, 1708, has this inscription: "*A me Josua de Valle Concordiæ, vulgo Kocherthal, ecclesiæ Germaniæ Neo-Eboracen ministro primo,*" (by me, Joshua, of the Valley of Concord, commonly called Kocherthal, first minister of the German church in New York). The baptismal record has this caption; "*Jesu Auspice,*" (Jesus our Leader). The list of church members is headed: "*Jesu ecclesiæ suæ Auctore et Conservatore*" (Jesus, Author and Preserver of His Church). Where he recorded gifts to his church he placed at the head of the page: "*Jesu retribuente,*" (Jesus Repaying). Over the record of his marriages he wrote "*Jesu cœlesti nostrarum animarum Sponso,*" (Jesus, heavenly Bridegroom of our souls). And when he recorded the death of those who passed away he wrote "*Jesu Vivificante,*" (Jesus vivifying).

Here in the green fields of his own Newtown, on the banks of the Hudson, his remains rested as in a new valley of concord until 1896 when they were disinterred and placed under the West Camp church and the stone that had so long covered his grave was removed and placed in the vestibule of that edifice as a mural tablet.

CHAPTER IX.

SIXTY FORMATIVE YEARS.

From the date of the abandonment of the scheme for the production of naval stores by the Palatines in September, 1712, to the beginning of the Revolutionary war, there is but little for a historian of this town to record. Less than seven hundred people resided in its borders and there were but three centres of population, Katsbaan, West Camp and Sau-gerties, and these but small clusters of houses. Former chapters have shown where scattering farmers lived. There were no factories, but such as saw mills, grist mills and the like incidental to the wants of an agricultural people. Of these and of other industries which arose soon after the Revolution, another chapter will speak. It is here proposed to tell the few historical incidents of the period between 1715-75.

To do that is to begin with the troubles between the English and French in 1710-11 in America in which the Palatines took part. It was an incident in the long struggle for the possession of North America which is so fully

told in the glowing pages of Francis Parkman. During the summer of 1710, when the Palatines were at New York preparing for the settlement at the Camp, an expedition against the French in Canada was decided on. During the first winter of the Palatines at the Camp (1710-11) they were called upon to furnish volunteers. Such a summons could not fall upon more willing ears. The long and brutal career of devastation and death during which they had suffered from the French in the homeland was not forgotten and with alacrity they enlisted. Two companies were formed, one of fifty-nine men under Capt. John Conrad Weiser and one of fifty-two men under Capt. Hartman Winedecker. A force of 1,600 men from New York, New Jersey and Connecticut was mustered at Albany for the invasion of Canada, and a fleet of sixteen men-of-war and forty transports with troops sailed from England for the St. Lawrence. But this fleet was wrecked on the rocks in that river and the invading force, hearing of the tidings as they reached Lake Champlain, returned to Albany and disbanded.

During the decade and a half that succeeded the dispersion of the Palatines the town gradually acquired population. The Palatines were reinforced by Dutchmen coming from Kingston until, by 1730, the vicinity of Katsbaan

had many settlers. About 1727 Johannes VanDriessen, a brother of Rev. Petrus VanDriessen, pastor of the Reformed church of Albany, through forged certificates, succeeded in obtaining from the Congregationalists of Connecticut, an ordination to the ministry. He came to East Camp, organized the present Reformed church of Germantown and built an edifice. Complaint was made to the Classis of Amsterdam, in Holland, and by that body all who were concerned therein were censured, and Rev. George Wilhelmus Mancius, (who had just been ordained), seems to have come to America to the Camp to investigate. He sailed from Amsterdam July 12, 1730. Arriving at East Camp he found himself powerless. The people were attached to VanDriessen and content in the long-desired church. So he passed over the river to West Camp. Examining into the state of affairs there and finding most of the colony worshipping two miles westward on the hill at Katsbaan he became their pastor in the autumn of 1730 and in 1732 the old stone church was built. Soon the whole flock was worshipping here. For some reason, presumably for the one given elsewhere, which was the difficulty in acquiring title to lands east of Sawyer's creek, most of the colony had settled on Kingston Commons and services at West Camp were interrupted

until 1765 when they were regularly continued. But we can not enter here upon the farther history of the Katsbaan church.

In 1754 Gen. Edward Braddock was commissioned by the British government as Commander-in-Chief of all their forces in America and sent to the colonies. With his disastrous expedition this history is not directly concerned. But the French and Indian war then beginning affected this town. The operations against France were to be carried on all along the line and to Sir William Johnson was intrusted the command of an expedition against Crown Point of 6,000 men of New England and New York. Some of these were from Ulster county and a few may have been recruits in our town. But in 1757 a grand campaign against Canada was projected. One expedition was determined upon to proceed by the way of Lake Champlain and was placed under the command of Gen. Webb. He reached Fort Edward with 4,000 men. Col. Munroe, another British officer, was at Fort William Henry, sixteen miles distant, with 3,000 men. Montcalm, in command of the French and Indian forces, approached with 9,000 reported troops and Col. Munroe called upon his superior, Gen. Webb, for assistance. It was not sent. Montcalm came upon Col. Munroe and for six days the latter was

besieged, when finding no reinforcements coming he was compelled to surrender on the promise that he should march out of Fort William Henry with the honors of war. But the French ruthlessly violated the terms and permitted their savage allies to murder and torture those who had relied upon their promise and surrendered. Among the troops under Webb lying but sixteen miles away and clamoring to be led to the relief of their countrymen were many of the Ulster county militia and of these was a company from Saugerties under the command of Capt. Tobias Wynkoop, who resided upon the Old Kings Road on the farm now known as the Kemble place.

These Ulster county troops numbered three hundred and were commanded by Col. Thomas Allison. They proceeded to Albany by sloops and then marched under a torrid August sun from Albany to Fort Edward in two days, carrying upon their backs their full equipment. Many dropped out by the way and the energy of the officers occasioned much complaining from the men. But officers as well as men marched, carrying muskets, fording streams and hastening forward unceasingly. And when they heard that the army was not to go to the relief of Munroe their indignation knew no bounds. It is said of the Ulster regiment that the whole contingent got under arms in less than an hour

and waded across the Hudson through water reaching their shoulders clamoring to be led against their hated foe. For many of them were from the valley of the Rondout and had long been sufferers from Indian outrage in Sullivan county, in Orange and in Wawarsing, and they had cheerfully enlisted to make an end of the atrocious warfare the French and Indians were conducting. This western frontier of Ulster county was peculiarly harassed by Indians during these years, and Sergeant Abraham Post, of Saugerties, had led a band of Saugerties men as scouts along this frontier during the year 1757.

For the campaign of 1758 Ulster county was called upon to furnish 228 men. There is no means of ascertaining how many were from this town. No Ulster county troops were with Abercrombie at his defeat at Ticonderoga as they had been sent with the force of Col. Bradstreet to reduce Fort Frontenac, on Lake Ontario. This was captured and the troops returned to Albany. The campaign of 1759 resulted in the capture of Quebec by Wolfe and the end of the war. But it is impossible to give the names of those who served, or tell who were the soldiers from this town. It seems probable that the company of Capt. Tobias Wynkoop was a part of this force against Frontenac in 1758 and of that of 1759 which, under

Amherst, succeeded in driving the French from Lake Champlain. But who composed it can not be told at this late day. The records have disappeared, or none were ever kept.

From this date until the Revolution no event for the historian seems to have occurred. The people quietly pursued their business from which they were to be aroused to battle for their liberties in the great contest with England. Here they nobly bore their part. An attempt will be made to show where they resided within the borders of this town when the contest began. In the chapters to follow it is proposed to tell the part borne by men of Saugerties, of whom so many served, and whose honored remains rest in so many of the cemeteries of this town. In too many cases their dust has returned to kindred clay and no mark is on the spot. In others the stone needs an Old Mortality to decipher it. The Saugerties Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, composed of the descendants of those patriots of this town, have sought out many of those graves, and have determined to care for them, and upon each Memorial Day lay a wreath upon each while others do the same to those who fought to preserve what they fought to secure.

CHAPTER X.

SAUGERTIES VILLAGE BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

Before the story of the War of the Revolution is taken up it is proposed to pass over the earlier settled portions of the town and consider such of the families then resident as were possessors of original patents, grants, or deeds, and where they were located before that great conflict. In doing this the point of view will be the decade 1760-70, looking towards our own time (1900). It is proposed to invite to a walk about town. The tramp will be over so much of the present village of Saugerties as lies on the north side of the Esopus creek. Instead of the spreading town which would greet us in 1900, within its bounds there are but twelve dwellings, all told, and a school house. There is no church edifice, as the people worship at the "steene Kerk op de Kats Baan," although for six years from 1780 to 1786 the pastor, Rev. Lambertus De Ronde resided in the Post house on the grounds of the present residence of Mrs. Dawes. We will set out for our walk from

the spot from whence the village takes its name. This is at the falls in the Saw creek at the Mason residence which will be for generations known as the Brink homestead. The mill of the old sawyer, or little sawyer, as he was familiarly called, (*klein zaagertje*,) stood here where the waters tumble down into the river out of this wild ravine.

On March 3, 1740, Barent Burhans, the miller, was recently deceased and had purchased, during his lifetime, a part of the patent of George Meals and Richard Hayes to lands at Saugerties. This patent is dated May, 1687. His four sons Johannes, William, Jacob and David, that day released each other and the trustees of Kingston Commons gave them a deed for their lands. John Brink, Jr., will marry a daughter of William Burhans and the place thus pass into the Brink family. John Brink will then establish a ferry across the Hudson to Chancellor Livingston's, which ferry will survive in the ferry to Tivoli. His son, Capt. Andrew Brink, will run a sloop to New York, carrying among other things the farm products of Livingston, and when Robert Fulton with Livingston will build the Clermont, will be associated with them, and command the boat upon her successful steam voyage, August 3, 1807, and that night she will lie anchored just opposite where we stand

to resume her voyage in the morning to Albany. When she is fitted up for passengers she will be commanded for some time by Capt. Brink. John Brink, Jr., will be a soldier of the Revolution and enlist three times during that war, and serve in succession in different regiments. His remains will lie with other soldiers of the same conflict in Main street cemetery. This place will remain in the Brink family until nearly 1900.

We would say in passing that we are standing at the northeast boundary of Ulster county on the Hudson as the act dividing the province into counties in 1683, bounded Ulster county on the Hudson from Sawyer's creek to Murderer's creek, which is between Newburgh and Cornwall. In 1767, the legislature will change the county line and it will start from the river at Wanton Island, near Smith's Landing, instead of from here.

Now let us pass to the south along the river. We are on the large Meals patent. Here is the stone house of Myndert Mynderse, built in 1743, twenty years before our walk. It is on the first land grant in the town given to George Meals and Richard Hayes covering $441\frac{3}{4}$ acres on both sides of the Esopus creek at its mouth. George Meals subsequently conveyed his interest to his partner who conveyed the same to John Hayes, from whom it passed to

his son-in-law, John Persen. He in turn bequeathed it to his daughter, the wife of the Myndert Mynderse spoken of. This place will be in 1900, still in possession of the family in which it has remained for eight generations. John Persen built a grist mill on the falls of the Esopus and a scow ferry. Here an iron bridge will be built in 1874. Another ferry will be maintained at Stony Point until a pontoon bridge replaces it, which Henry Barclay will buy. These ferries in turn will be succeeded by a wooden bridge in 1839, and this by the above mentioned iron bridge.

We journey on past the old grave yard on the Mynderse place with its venerable stones. Notice the beautiful prospect over the Hudson. None is finer in this vicinity. At the foot of the hill on the dock is standing the old Post house under one of the largest buttonball trees along the river.

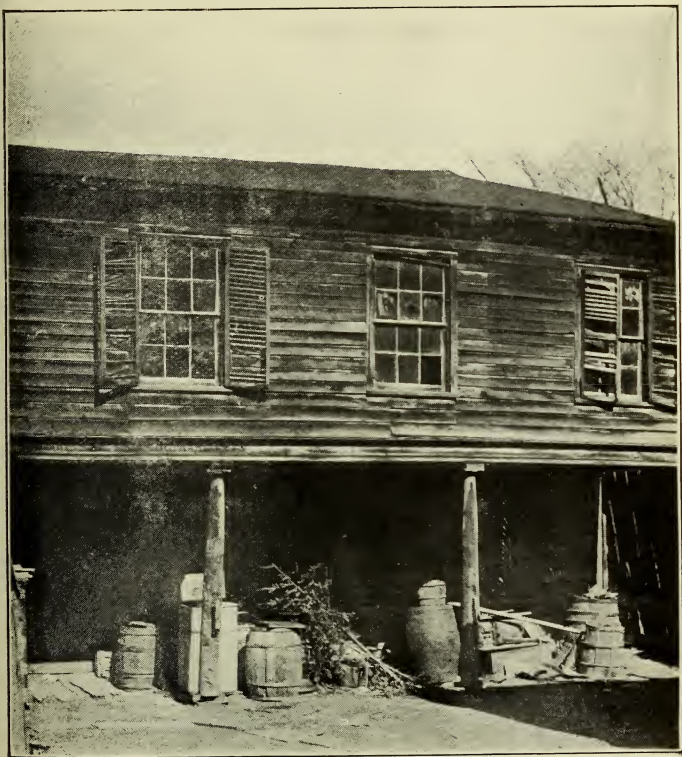
From here we return northward. On this corner of Main and Malden streets is the house of Egbert Schoonmaker. It will be still in the family of a descendant, the son of the late Peter P. Schoonmaker, in 1900. A little north is that of Samuel Schoonmaker near the second Meals' patent. Attention is directed to the fact that this land is a natural park. The lands of this region were heavily wooded except directly north of the village until about the

vicinity of the "People's Road" east of the Canoe Hill. This park had long been cultivated by the Indians in maize, or Indian corn. In Capt. Martin Cregier's "Journal of the Esopus War," written Sept. 24, 1663, he writes: "The party that was sent out in the night returned home about two o'clock in the afternoon; they were at Sager's Killetje, on the Indian maize plantation, but saw no Indians, nor anything to indicate that they had been there for a long time, for the maize had not been hoed and could not come to its full growth, but had been much injured by the wild beasts; neither will any of it reach perfection, except one plantation of it, which was good, having been hoed by the Indians. It was, however, much injured by the wild beasts; each of our people brought a load of it home on his back and left some more standing which we will when convenient bring hither. They also say that it is beautiful maize land, suitable for a number of bouweries and for the immediate reception of the plough."

It is well to notice that it is to John Persen, mentioned above, that the old stone church of Katsbaan is indebted for the grant upon which the church stands, which he obtained for it in March, 1731, from the trustees of Kingston Commons and he was the first elder in its consistory. And, returning to Egbert Schoon-

maker's, we should remark that the church will owe its continued life during the interval from the death of Domine Mancius in 1762 to the settlement of De Ronde as its pastor in 1780, a period of eighteen years, to its most active elder, Egbert Schoonmaker, whose efforts will keep it alive during the time when the Dutch Reformed church is rent by an ecclesiastical contest, and the country is at war and Katsbaan without a pastor.

From the house of Egbert Schoonmaker on the corner we pass westward. Here are two houses on opposite sides of the street belonging to Hiskia DuBois. One will be long known as old Kiersted house. Just west of these and near where will be the Reformed church resides John Post. His brother, Abraham, keeps tavern still farther westward. It is the village gathering place. It is built of strong timbers firmly clasped and will remain the village tavern for almost a century. On its site in 1900 will stand the hardware store of James Russell. But the tavern meanwhile will pass from the Posts to Frederick Krows in 1817, who will conduct it until about 1850, when the building will be moved back from the street to the rear of the hardware store and will be a tinshop until 1900. North of this tavern of Abraham Post, Jacobus, another brother, resides. On this site Dr. Dawes will



THE POST TAVERN.

build after many years a residence farther east than the house of Jacobus Post, which stands close to the street. It is in this house that Domine DeRonde resided as said above. Northwest of this residence of Jacobus Post is the dwelling of Isaac Post. This building will be still standing later than 1860 under the hill west of what will afterward be the terminus of Elm street.

We will return to the tavern of Abraham Post. This is yet, in 1763, a part of the town of Kingston and will be for fifty years. But with the store of Cornelius Persen at Katsbaan it is one of the centres of the town and in a dozen years it will be the meeting place of men to discuss the issues of the Revolution. Here will come the messenger from Kingston with the patriotic Articles of Association which all will sign. Here will be told the victories and defeats of the long war. These roof-trees will ring with the shouts that proclaim the victories of Saratoga and Yorktown and the conquests of John Paul Jones. And from here, and from Cornelius Persen's, will depart the militia re-enforcements for the capture of Burgoyne. To this old tavern will come the messenger to tell that Vaughan's soldiers have set fire to the Wolven house, where in 1900 John G. Myers will live, and here in the long years of the following peace

the story will be often told to younger generations.

But we will resume our walk. No houses now until we reach that one in the distance except the school house near where afterwards will be the Russell Block until we reach Petrus Myer's which will be occupied after long years by Sherwood D. Myer, a descendant. One dwelling more remains. In it is living Johannes Myer, and it will remain in the possession of his descendants until it is purchased by John Michael Genthner.

The ever beautiful site of the village with its grand guardianship of the Hudson and the Catskills, where the Esopus sweeps into the river, is the same in the middle of the Eighteenth Century, as at the opening of the Twentieth. But the dozen houses of 1763 are hundreds now, and the fifty inhabitants then are thousands to-day.

CHAPTER XI.

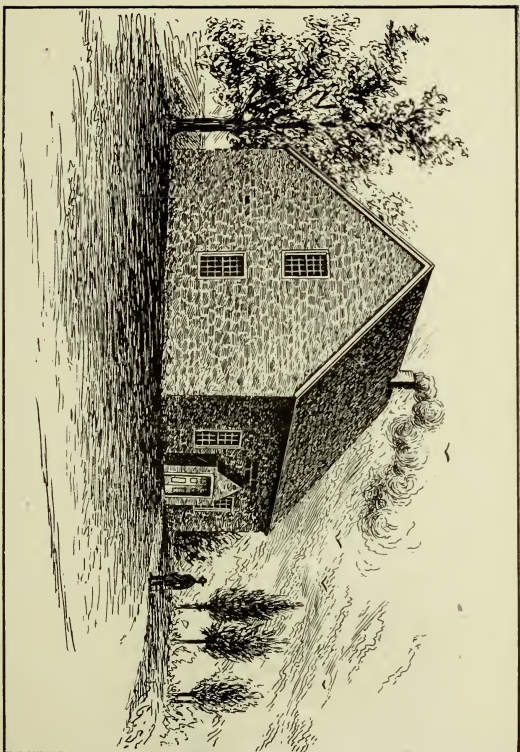
KATSBAAN BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

Beginning at the old stone church in Katsbaan our next walk will be around that section of the town. It is the most populous portion and we will find as many residents as there will be in 1900. As we assemble at the church before us lies one of the grandest visions of the majesty of the Catskills. At no point from which these mountains are visible are they so impressive as from the cemetery hill near at hand. Although around us is a thickly settled region most of the houses are simple structures of frame, or stone, and many are of logs. The forests have been cleared hereabout, except that there is a large grove of white oaks around the church of which a few will remain until 1900. This white oak forest extends eastward across the Saw creek and over the flats to West Camp and will be spoken of in another chapter.

The church has stood already almost forty years. Who built it and why is told elsewhere. The trustees of Kingston Commons under date of March 1, 1731, leased in perpetuity to Johannes Persen and Hendrick Fees, and to their

successors in office an acre of land on each side of the "Old Kings Road" for those "professing the religion and doctrines disciplined in the Reformed Protestant Church of Holland; instituted and approved by the national Synod of Dort * * * * to build a house for God's worship * * * * at a place called 'Ye Kats Baan;' said place being a rock ledge where the King's Highway that leads from Kingston to Albany runs a great way upon said ledge; the said two acres to be where the ledge or rock shows itself most open," the rental to be three pepper corns per annum if demanded; and twenty-two acres more were granted as a glebe to be used for the minister. This was situate at the north end of said open rock, and from thence to the Saw creek, and is practically the land of the Everitt and Whitney places. Afterwards another grant of sixteen and one-half acres, situate where will be the farm of Alfred W. Fraser, was added to the glebe.

The church will be the same edifice in 1900, and yet not the same. At that later day it will extend seventeen feet to the south and the side walls will be greatly altered. At this pre-Revolutionary day it has a Gothic roof and the eaves come half-way down the side walls as they will be in 1900. The entrance is on the east side and through a porch in which hangs



THE KATSBAAK CHURCH OF 1732.

a conch shell to announce the hour of worship. Over the porch and under the eaves are inserted a number of brown stones inscribed with the names of the builders, which stones will be removed and inserted in the north wall when the church is rebuilt in 1867. There is no steeple nor bell. When built in 1732 there were no pews. These came later. And in November, 1743, there was a sale of seats. The pulpit is on the west side of the church and opposite the entrance. It is an octagon and stands on a pedestal. An aisle through the centre separates the men and women. Across the centre another aisle runs from north to south so that the two aisles form a cross the four arms of which are of equal length. The half of the church on the north of the aisle from the door to the pulpit is occupied by the "manse bancken," or seats for the men, and on the south side by the "vrouwen bancken," or seats for the women. One row of seats begins at the left of the minister and runs all around the wall on three sides to the door, with a corresponding row from his right hand around three sides to the same door. Besides this row there are on the men's side three rows of seats east and west to the cross aisle, with three cross rows, and on the women's side three east and west rows and one cross row. On the farther side of the cross aisle five cross rows on

the men's side, and six for the women with one row on either side from the cross aisle to the door. At this date there is no fire in the building in winter, but long oval stones from the beds of streams are heated at home and brought along to the services. It is not proposed to speak in this place of the attire of the worshippers, nor of the services. Domines Mancius and De Ronde will be described in another chapter. These pastors covered successively a period of forty years of faithful service among a faithful people.

The story of this church will be told in another chapter. We will proceed upon our walk. Below the church hill, on the west side of the King's Road, lived Hermanus Rechtmyer. His descendants in 1900, after one hundred and sixty-three years of occupancy, will still own this farm.

Across the Beaver creek westward resides Hendrick Freligh. This farm was purchased by the Frelighs March 4, 1727, and they afterwards acquired the William H. Hommel farm as well; while Peter Freligh, son of Hendrick, lived upon the Abram E. Hommel farm and afterwards upon the first named, or Hendrick Freligh farm, upon the death of his father. Two sons of Peter, Solomon and Moses entered the ministry of the Dutch Reformed Church, as did Peter, son of Solomon. Sol-

omon became a noted divine and professor of theology, and trained the Rev. Dr. Henry Ostrander for the ministry. He (Solomon) will be so ardent a patriot during the Revolution as to be hated and hunted by the British. This Freligh farm during the next century will be known first as the Wells and then as the Gray farm.

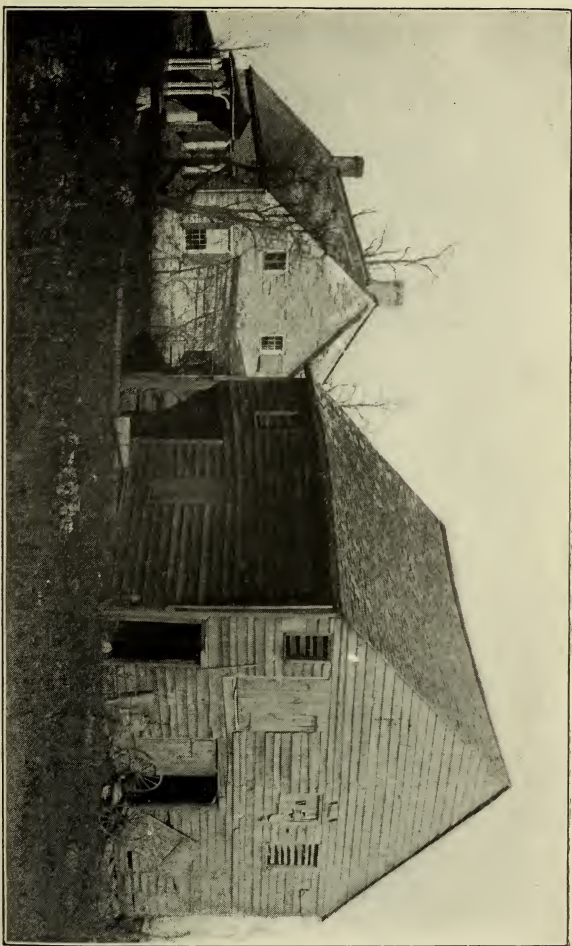
On the east side of the Old Kings Road resides Richard Davenport. His land stretches from the road from the stone church leading to West Camp all the way south to where, in 1900, will be the hotel of Jacob Kaufman and his dwelling is here where Ephraim I. Myer will long afterwards live. The Davenports will be Tories in the Revolution and when the cause of England will be wiped out in patriotic blood they will find more congenial neighbors in Canada, and his tract will be divided into three or more farms. The homestead will be owned by Jonathan Myer, who will conduct a tavern here. When he dies, about 1814, his widow will marry Elias Snyder, whom the Indians in 1780 will capture and carry to Canada, and who will escape from captivity. In 1823 Elias Snyder will sell the farm to John Snyder Myer, the father of Ephraim I. Myer. Adjoining the Davenport tract on the south is the small place of Cornelius Osterhoudt which will soon pass to the

Fieros, and will for over a century be a tavern, and on the death of Mrs. Mary Fiero, in 1854, be successively conducted by Vander Beck, Gaddis, Bostwick and Jacob Kaufman.

Next to this place on the south resides Cornelius Persen. Here is the store of the whole region. In the approaching war, when the British will occupy New York City, the merchandise will have to be hauled from Philadelphia by an inland route. Here the patriotic meetings during the long war will be held. Here the recruits to reinforce the army at Saratoga will assemble. And after the war John Jacob Astor will have his headquarters here to which the trappers of the Catskills will bring their furs. The place will remain in the possession of the descendants of Cornelius Persen, the Cornelius P. Brink family, until about the close of the coming century.

One-fourth of a mile farther north, on the west side of the Old Kings Road, is the home of Johannes Trumpbour. In after years the church will sell the glebe lands mentioned in this chapter, which lie north of the church and purchase this property and build a parsonage. In 1851 it will be sold and be successively owned by Reuben Quick, John P. Sax and Evert Sax.

Teunis Aspel resides on the farm westward which will be owned in succession by the



THE ERSSEN RESIDENCE AND STORE.

Fieros; by William Valkenburgh, Peter M. Valkenburgh and lastly by Chauncey P. Finger. South of this is the farm of Petrus Luyck, or Loucks, on both sides of the Beaver creek. This will be in after years in possession of the Fieros, then of different members of the Sax family until Addison Sax in 1900. It was purchased by Luyck March 4, 1746.

We have now reached the Saugerties road. Beginning at Saugerties this follows practically the present course of the Canoe Hill road of 1900 northward and westward until where William Clement will reside in 1900. Thence it will run south along the division fence about three hundred yards, and then west across the land of Cornelius Persen to the Old Kings Road. Thence it will follow this highway until within one hundred feet of the coming turnpike when it will turn westward and pass close alongside of where the limekiln of William Fiero will stand; swing south around by the house of Petrus Luyck (Addison Sax's); ford the Beaver creek and then swing back under the hill to where will be the future turnpike at the residence, in 1900, of Stephen F. Valkenburgh. This road will be described as running "from Sager's to the cedar clipje and thence to the blue mountains." This "cedar clipje" is the large boulder still lying in 1900 nearly opposite the

Fisher store in Quarryville and was at the time of our walk surmounted by a cedar tree which will remain there until about 1860. No houses are along this road above the long Quarryville hill until Saxton is reached, and the road runs through a dense woods. The invaluable quarries are unknown, and from them millions of dollars of bluestone are yet to be taken. But at Saxton there are some fifteen houses, and the rich plain at the foot of the mountains is known and cultivated.

CHAPTER XII.

CEDAR GROVE BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

Our walk is resumed at the store of Cornelius Persen in Katsbaan. This store stands by the road side, and will until September 4, 1852, the day of the explosion of the steamer Reindeer at Malden, when by a "bee" of neighbors it will be moved back from the road about fifty feet. Here it will stand until the summer of 1900, when it will be torn down. Meanwhile it will be a storehouse excepting during 1867, while the church is being enlarged and rebuilt, when the pulpit and furnishings will be placed in this building and it will be used for worship.

Across the road is the blacksmith shop of the settlement. Here labors Jan Top, one of two African slaves owned by Cornelius Persen. Top is a character whose love of horse flesh and whose shrewd sayings will be spoken of about Katsbaan for two or three generations, as he will remain here until the slaves of this state are finally emancipated in 1827, and for a number of years thereafter as a freeman. Under a shelving rock at the foot of these precipitous limestone walls just westward dwells

the last Indian of this region. The remains of his wigwam will remain there for seventy-five years, and more, and ashes may be found there in 1900. He is called "Nachte Jan" or Night John. He is a close friend of Cornelius Persen and when Runnip and his Indians, in 1780, will capture and carry off to Canada Capt. Jeremiah Snyder and his son Elias, Nachte Jan will warn Persen in time to escape and save his goods from plunder.

Passing south along the Old Kings Road we will find Johannes Young living on the east side of the road on lands to belong in 1900 to the Winne estate. The house will be standing after 1850, and the well will be in existence in 1900. The part of the Winne estate on the west side of the road belongs to the tract granted Coenradt Reghtmyer, February 24, 1728. The dwelling was where the house of Isaac Hommel will stand in 1900, and the old stone house in which Hommel will then live may be, in part at least, of the earlier date.

On the west side of the Old Kings Road, and in the vicinity of where Nathan Van Steenberg will live in 1900 is the school house. Afterwards another school house will be erected on the opposite side of the road farther south on the site of the house in which Christian Myer will live in 1900. Here school will be kept until the Common School law of June 19,

1812, is passed, when the site of the then existing school in Katsbaan will be purchased and the school be continued there in successive buildings until 1900. But a school house will afterward be erected opposite the Myer house and be known as the Cedar Grove school.

On the east side of the Old Kings Road and farther south and east than the dwelling of Young is the house of Johannes Mower. This is very near the site in 1900 of the dwelling on the estate of the late Peter W. Myer. It will pass from the Mowers into the ownership of the Myers, and descend from David to his grandson Peter. There was at one time a large tract in the hands of the Mower family and on this tract stands the house in which Frederick Eygenaer lives. It is east of the road and back in the fields northeast of where in 1900 William D. Brinnier will have his summer home. The ruined house may be seen after 1860.

A half mile west of the Old Kings Road and westward from the school house is the house of Ury and Hermanus Hommel. At the close of the next century it will pass from the Hommel family to Luther Myer. Still farther west is living Christian Snyder.

We will return to the Old Kings Road. As we go south we come to the Meals and Hayes grant. This contains 252 acres and was given

those parties by Thomas Dongan, Governor of the province of New York, under date of April 15, 1685. It is described as being "at a place called Sagiers, three miles westward from the mouth of the Esopus creek at a run called the Bever Kill." So this little stream has had its name from that early date. This grant stretches over the farms which in the next century will belong to the Kembles and the Wynkoops and reach south to the "church land," or grant to the Dutch church of Kingston. Thus this Meals and Hayes tract will cover farther south than the site in 1900 of the old farmhouse of Mrs. Germond. The grant is long and not wide enough to reach as far west as the houses which will be in 1900 the dwellings on the Rio Alto Stock farm and that of Russell Wynkoop. Evert Wynkoop resides, as we take our walk, on what will be the stock farm and he is the great-great grandfather of Russell Wynkoop, who will be the owner in 1900 of part of the tract. Towards the north end of this grant is the house of Johannes Valk nearly opposite to what will be after many years the Brinnier house spoken of. Farther south Capt. Tobias Wynkoop resides, where will be the Kemble house of the Nineteenth Century. And near the south bounds of the grant is the house of William Myer, where long afterward will stand the old farmhouse of Mrs. Germond. On

the east side of the road, and farther south, Ephraim Van Keuren lives on the site at the large spring where in 1900 Abram Wolven will reside, and farther south on the hill will be after the Revolution the hotel of Johannes Myer, whose farm will be in 1900 in possession of Wells Myer, his grandson. This tavern will be in twenty-five years a noted hostelry. Aaron Burr, among other public men, will make it a frequent stopping place on his trips to and from Albany. Here he will enjoy many an evening's chat with mine host "Oom Hans Myer," with whom he had served in the Continental army, and stories of the brilliant and fascinating Col. Burr will linger long in the traditions of the vicinity of this tavern and that of Abraham Post in Saugerties, where he so often resorted. A mile farther west beyond the great bend of the Beaver creek resides Maria Snyder on the farm in after years of Noah Snyder, which will be in possession of John J. Jordan in 1900. And a little farther east is that of Hieronymus Valkenburgh, whose descendant John Valkenburgh will sell it near the close of the next century to Thomas Spellman, who will dispose of it to the West Shore Railroad Co. And a short distance north is the house of Johannes Hommel on the Peter I. Snyder farm of after years.

We have walked from Katsbaan to Union-

ville. We return to the house of Cornelius Persen in Katsbaan and pass down the road that winds across the fields to Saugerties. Here is the residence of Wilhelmus Valk. This farm will remain in possession of the Valk family until 1870, when Peter V. Snyder will purchase it. The road here runs east, but soon turns southeast and crosses this little brook. Beyond this and on the east side of the road resides Hendrick Osterhoudt, where long afterwards will dwell Cornelius Hoff. A mile farther south, where afterwards will run the "People's Road," lives Adam Short on the gravel hill. His house will long remain and be called "the old fort." Farther east and near what will long afterward be the Brede crossing of the West Shore railroad are living John Monk and John Fennal. A quarter mile south from them, and west of the Canoe Hill road, and south of the above "People's Road," on what will in 1900 be the Cantine farm, just below the hill in front of the Lasher house, is living Petrus Eygenaer whose farm stretches across the flat to the Canoe Hill. Thus we are brought to Saugerties, described in Chapter X.

CHAPTER XIII.

CHURCHLAND AND PLATTEKILL BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

The next pre-Revolutionary walk about town will be down the Old Kings Road to the southern boundary of the town at the bridge over the Plattekill. We will assemble at the inn of Johannes Myer, which stands where Wells Myer will reside a century later.

As we get ready suppose we talk of this Old Kings Road. It is the oldest highway in the town. The first allusion to it occurs in a petition of John Osterhoudt, Jan Burhans and Cornelius Vernoy, all of Kingston, to a special court held in April, 1670, at "ye towne hall at Kingston, in Esopus" by a commission appointed by Governor Francis Lovelace "for setting out the Boundaryes of Kingston, Hurley, and Marbleton and for Regulateing the Affaires of those places and ye parts adjacent." The petitioners ask "that fifty-foure acres cleare and good land that his Honr, the Govr, hath been pleased to promise and grant them on a certain neck of land five miles distant from Kingston, north, over the

Kill and near the ffootpath leading to Albany be commended to the Govr. to be confirmed and allowed." With this petition there was one by Tjerck Claes DeWitt and William Montania for a grant to set up a saw mill for the public benefit at the same place, with seventy five acres a mile further at a place called "Dead Men's Bones." This too was granted on condition that the above five petitioners, with two others build their seven houses all together in an "innshipp" for mutual protection. The spot where the mill was to be, and was erected, was at what will be our stopping point to-day at the bridge over the Plattekill between the towns of Saugerties and Ulster. The "ffootpath" to Albany was where is now the Old Kings Road. On June 19, 1703, an act was passed by the colonial legislature "for the laying out, regulating, clearing and preserving public **Common Highways throughout this Colony.**" This act directed that a road be laid out from the New Jersey line to Albany, and the commissioners from Ulster county were John Cock, Jacob Aertsen and Abraham Hasbrouck. This road passed through Goshen, Shawangunk, New Paltz and Rosendale, to Kingston; thence north, through Fox Hall and Pine Bush to the fording place across the Esopus creek, at the mouth of the Sawkill; thence on

the west side of the Esopus creek northerly to Albany. As Queen Anne was reigning it was named "The Queen's Highway," and so appears in old deeds. But as no female sovereign sat on the British throne again while New York was a colony the name of "The Old King's Road" soon displaced the other.

In our former walks we have endeavored to locate the houses and families and tell who was residing in them as we passed by. On this trip we will merely speak of the grants of land we pass and of some of the features. As we leave the inn of Johannes Myer the tract on the west side of the road is the "Churchland" and it will give the name to the locality. It is a grant of two hundred acres originally made March 1, 1710, to the Kingston Dutch Church and greatly enlarged by grants of adjoining lands, and land in the vicinity made subsequently. The original grant begins on the small stream called in the grant "The Muddah Kill" and runs to the mountains (Mt. Marion) and thence north along the mountains to the Meals and Hayes patent; then along their south bounds to and across the "Queen's Highway." The northwest part of the grant will be the farm of the heirs of Isaac Snyder. In this grant the small stream running past what will be the house of Peter B. Post is called "Cartrit's Kill."

South of the churchland is the grant of Frederick Markle. It was originally of eighty-four acres, with later additions. The first grant bore date March 1, 1715. This will be the farm of C. S. Lowther. The bounds are given thus: Northwest by the Styll Berg (Mt. Marion) and southwest, southeast and northeast by Kingston Commons. Thus no adjacent lands had been granted at that time.

Then crossing to the east side of the Old Kings Road we find the farm of Christian Myer, one of the most prominent of the Palatines who landed at West Camp, October 4, 1710. His deed was given 21 February, 1724. It will be the Cantine farm of 1900. In the deed is described the cave of the Muddah Kill which is so well known to residents of Saugerties.

Next south is the farm of Peter Winne. This will pass into the possession of David Polhemus, Benjamin Myer and towards the close of the next century to Mynderse Wynkoop. It will be the birthplace of the late Dr. Jesse Myer, of Kingston, and of the father of the late John G. Myers, of this village.

Some distance south of the Markle land is the place of Cornelius Langendyke, which will remain in the Longendyke family for more than one hundred years when it will be purchased by Peter Snyder. The lands reached

down to the Plattekill, above the Gilsinger falls. Part of this land was known in 1725 as "Robert Chism's plantation." Adjoining the Longendyke farm Frederick Scram on March 28, 1729, purchased 42 acres along the land of Tunis Osterhoudt which included part of the Traphagen tract now to be mentioned. But all the flats north and east to the Winne land at the Muddah Kill are still commons. Only where a century later Francis Myer and Alexander Dowling will live are two small houses.

We are now come to the Traphagen tract which passes the doors of where Myer and Dowling will live. On the fifth day of December 1688, there was granted to Johannes, Hendrick and William Traphagen a long, narrow strip of land containing two hundred and fifty acres, the north bounds of which were near the West Shore crossing of 1900 south of Schermerhorn's, and the south bounds reached almost to where in coming years will be the Plattekill church. It did not reach farther east than where in after years will be the Mt. Marion station of the West Shore railroad, nor as far west as the hotel west of that station. At its southeast corner it almost touches a triangular grant of 133 acres to Paulus Paulison, which runs diagonally to where will be, in 1900, the covered bridge over the Plattekill into the town of Ulster. Its base is almost on the line

of the West Shore south from the railroad station. This grant was given in 1688, but subsequent to the Brink grant mentioned below, and occasioned trouble as the bounds of the Paulison grant infringed upon the preceding one to Brink. On the west side of the Old Kings Road are the eighty-six acres, and the subsequent forty additional ones granted to Peter Winne. Here in 1900 will be the Ira Snyder farm. This was first conveyed December 15, 1692. It will remain with the descendants of Peter Winne until almost 1900. Its west bound is the Plattekill, its south bound the Brink tract and its east bound the Old Kings Road. On the west side of the Plattekill and across from the Winne grant are fifty-one acres sold to Lucas DeWitt February 24, 1728.

We have reached the last grant in the town and one of the very first in point of time. It was purchased by Cornelius Lambertsen Brink February 6, 1688, from the trustees of the Kingston Commons. Huybert Lambertsen Brink emigrated from Wageningen, Holland, and arrived in New York December, 1659, on the ship Faith. The above son Cornelius was born on the voyage. The father settled in Kingston and then became one of the original patentees of Hurley and moved there. In 1663, at the Indian massacre of Kingston, his wife and three children, including Cornelius,

were captured by the Indians and carried to the Shawangunk mountains where they were held captives three months. At last they were rescued and restored to their family. When Cornelius was twenty-six years of age he married Maretje Meynderse and three years later bought the tract spoken of on which we stand. It follows the Plattekill from this covered bridge to the Esopus and then down below the coming West Shore bridge and the falls. He built this old stone house and it will be the residence of a descendant, Reuben Brink, two hundred years after this, when it will pass into the possession of Charles Brink, another descendant, who previously owned another part of the same grant. Another part will be long in the possession of Peter H. Brink, of the same family, and then be owned by the Finger estate. Here is the covered wooden bridge over the Plattekill and the line of the town of Ulster. It is the limit of our walk.

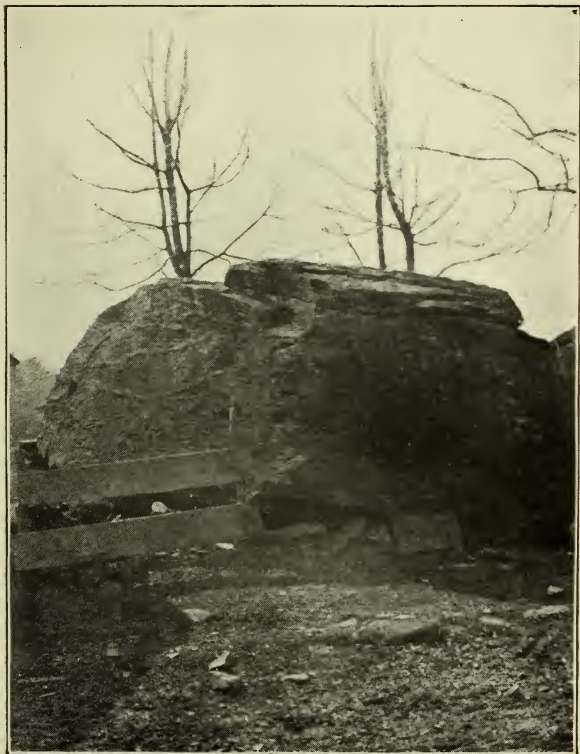
CHAPTER XIV.

SAXTON AND ASBURY BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

Following the road to "the blue mountains by way of the cedar clipje" we will attempt to locate the families settled there before the Revolution. This is rendered more difficult than in other parts of the the town as the records of early deeds and grants in the office of the county clerk give but little assistance. But it can be done approximately.

As we pass up the road through the future Quarryville all is the silence of a dense forest in which is the budding of spring, and the early song of countless birds is heard alone. As we reach the plain at the foot of the Catskills we find spreading farms around. The Dutch settlers had a native scent for fertile lands and soon learned what was to be had at the foot of the mountains.

Somewhere in the vicinity of the iron bridge of 1900, on the road from Saugerties to Woodstock, Hendrick Wolven, John Wolven and Jacob Brink are living, and northeast from them Tunis Shoe. We cannot locate them ex-



THE CEDAR CLIPJE.

actly and will not pass so far south. We have reached the farm where, towards the close of the next century, Milton Crapser will live and die. Here is living Capt. Jeremiah Snyder, of the First Ulster Regiment, and his son Elias. They are very ardent patriots, and very efficient in the cause, and have incurred the enmity of their Tory neighbors, of whom there are a number here along these mountains and near the county line. In May, 1780, incited by these disloyal neighbors, a band of Indians will carry the captain and his son to Niagara and Canada as captives. Just north of Snyder's, near the residence in 1900 of John S. Overbaugh, is living Lawrence Winne, and across the Plattekill, a half mile east, resides Matthias Markle. North of Winne's about half a mile is the house of Evert DeWitt, and a little farther north is living Aaron Winne with Frederick Rowe, Jr., as a near neighbor. This Rowe, a Tory, will be met by Capt. Snyder while a captive on his way to Canada, fraternizing with his Indian and Tory friends.

We are now come to where in the next century will be the residence of Col. Christopher Fiero, and the birthplace of his son, J. Newton Fiero. Near this spot resides Samuel Wells, who will be an ancestor of the wife of Col. Fiero. And proceeding north over what will be in coming years the Saxton flats we

pass in succession the houses of Luke DeWitt, Johannes Rowe, William Burhans, Michael Plank and John Burhans before reaching the county line. Johannes Plank is living across the fields near what, in 1900, will be the home of William Winne. Of these John Burhans, William Burhans, Johannes Rowe, Johannes Plank, Jr., and Frederick Rowe, Jr., will be ardent loyalists and for this reason hated intensely by their patriotic neighbors.

Having reached the Albany county line (soon to be Greene county), we will descend by a road through the woods to what will be Asbury. As we reach the lowlands under the range of hills northeast of the future Quarryville, we find Myndert Dederick living on what will be afterwards the homestead of John Dederick (late Chidester's) and farther east is the dwelling of William Dederick; while south, near where in 1900 Gideon P. Ostrander will live, is living Wilhelmus Rowe. Thence crossing over to the Katsbaan church and passing north we find Peter McGee dwelling near where James E. Dederick is to live in the next century, while farther south, along the Saw creek, resides Johannes Shoub.

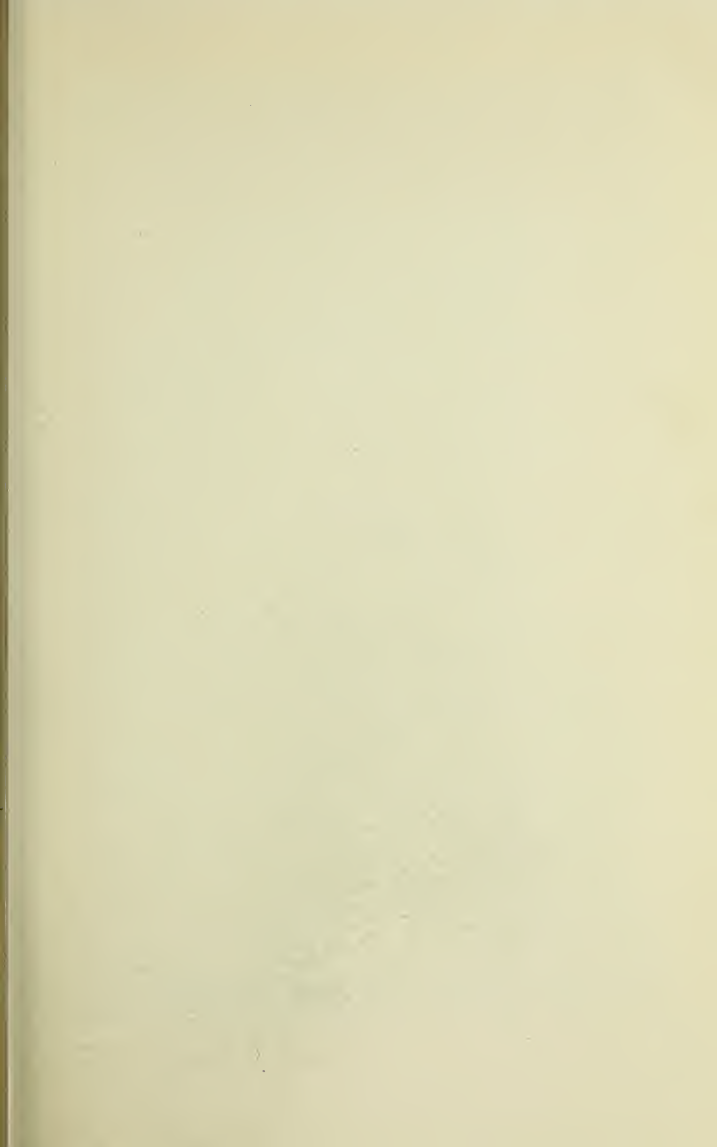
Let us walk on north. Crossing to the west side of the Old Kings Road we find Hans Ury Eligh on the Andries Eligh farm, to be owned later by Nicholas Mower. Farther northeast

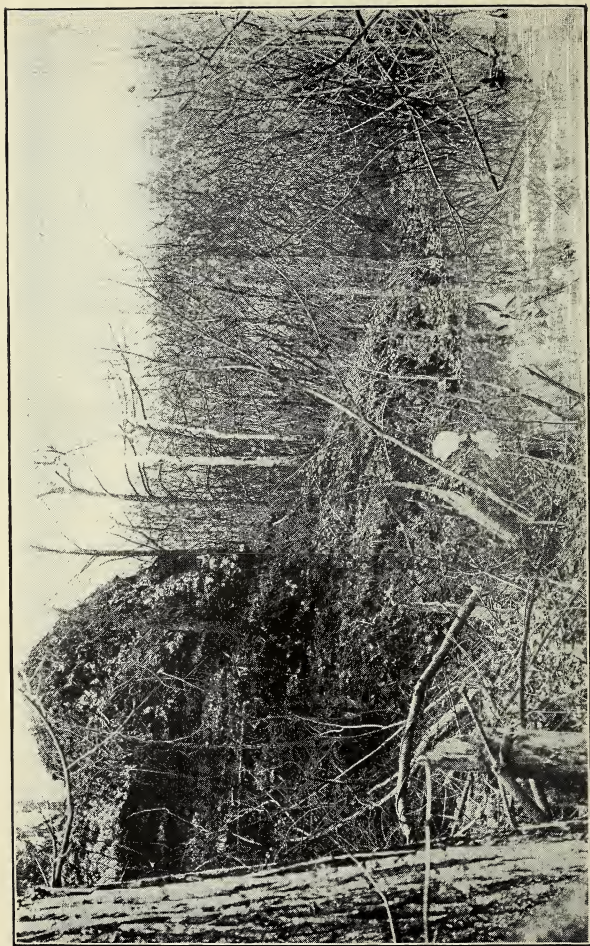
across the Kings Road are the lands of Christian Dederick, with the house of John Luke just south of Dederick's; and at Asbury, on the west side of the above road, reside Zachariah Snyder and Evert Wynkoop. Farther north and east of the road, at the county line, is living Valentine Fiero. On his lands is the "Steene Herte Fonteyne" (Stone Heart Spring), or source of the Saw creek, and thus the northeast corner both of Ulster county up to 1767, and of the patent of the Kingston Commons. Its location was the occasion of dispute and legal strife during a severe litigation, in 1738. The question arose, "Where did Albany county begin?" In the original description Albany county extended south to the Sawyer's creek. Ulster extended north to the Sawyer's creek. Now, what was meant? The mouth of Sawyer's creek is at Saugerties village on the Hudson. The source is the above spring west of the "Big Vly." The trustees of Kingston Commons contended that Albany county came to the source of the creek and followed it to the river. The assessors of the town compelled the trustees to indemnify them, which was annually done, and at last the strife was ended by granting the contention of the trustees. Afterwards the county line was continued in a straight line to the river.

Not only was the question of the boundary involved, but it included that of the bounds of the Kingston Commons. The trustees had begun a number of ejectment suits in which the question of title was raised. This had to be determined by locating the county line as this was the bound of the Commons. As told in Schoonmaker's "History of Kingston" one of the witnesses testified:

"Margaret Snyder, the wife of Zachariah Snyder, being duly sworn deposeth and saith, that she is the daughter of Valentine (Felte) Fiero, * * * that she was born and brought up at her father's, and after being married removed to near the 'Steene Herte,' and lived there until about twenty years ago. When she was ten, twelve, or thirteen years of age her father turned the cattle (as she believes about the 25th April) in the woods near the Steene Herte Fonteyne where one of the cows was entangled in the morass. She went to see, and found a cow, which she called her own, just drawn out. * * *

"Her father having cut a switch, took her to the north side of the Steene Herte rock, and taking her by the hair, told her he would give her something to remember, that that side was Albany, showing her letters, and gave her a smart whipping. After which he took her to the south side of said rock and told her





STONE HERTE AND FOUNTAIN.

that side was Esopus, and pointed at letters on that side of the rock, and giving her a second whipping told her to remember that he had been flag bearer, and Peter York and Nicholas Branden chain bearers on the survey, and that was the line between Albany and Esopus, etc."

In the illustration the spring is given and the overhanging rock, which from the spring resembles, measureably, a heart rudely shaped in stone. The spring is on the west side of the "Big Vly," at the point where the Saw creek is the outlet and thus was at that time the northeast corner of Ulster county, and of Kingston Commons.

Suppose we retrace our steps and go to the river along this creek, the county line. Before we reach the vicinity of the Katsbaan church we come into a great forest of immense white oaks extending a mile each way over the flats towards West Camp. These flats are very low and swampy. The trees are of tremendous girth, height and age. A very few will still remain in 1900 at Katsbaan church, but the spreading forest will be cleared by the grandfather of the Cornelius Hoff, who will reside in 1900 on the Canoe Hill road.

Immediately east from the church, on the east side of the Saw creek, and thus in Albany county until 1767, is the patent of Dederick

Mauterstock which stretches to the east and south for many hundreds of acres. Part of this land will be in possession in 1900 of John H. Mauterstock, a descendant. Farther south are fifty acres granted to Peter Mowarse. This is the land which will lie in 1900 where the creek will turn east before it reaches the Malden turnpike and will be at that date the land of Jeremiah Mower and Mrs. Ellinger. The "Muddy Kill" of 1900 is called, as we walk, "The kill from the fountain," which fountain will still flow with a large stream in 1900, before the door of William Valk. In the deed of Mowarse the hill east of what will, in the next century, be the Hoff place, is called "Armpachlo's bergh," or, in English, "the hill of poor duds." This deed of Mowarse was given February 24, 1728. West of the Mowarse land is a small piece of glebe of the Katsbaan church which will belong to Alfred W. Fraser in 1900.

Our course is still along the Saw creek south and east. Here is the farm which will be owned next century by Michael and then by Luther Fiero. Now it is the possession of Robert Beaver, who purchased it February 28, 1735. It is described as lying east of "Armpachlo's bergh," and he has more land farther south and east of the next, or Canoe Hill. This word, spelled "Kanow Hill," first appears

in a deed given to Hiskia DuBois February 25, 1726.

Once more we have reached the patent to Meals and Hayes which lies east of the trotting course at Saugerties and stretches north beyond the north end of the Washington avenue of 1900, and have thus reached the settlement at Saugerties described in a former chapter.

CHAPTER XV.

MALDEN AND WEST CAMP BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

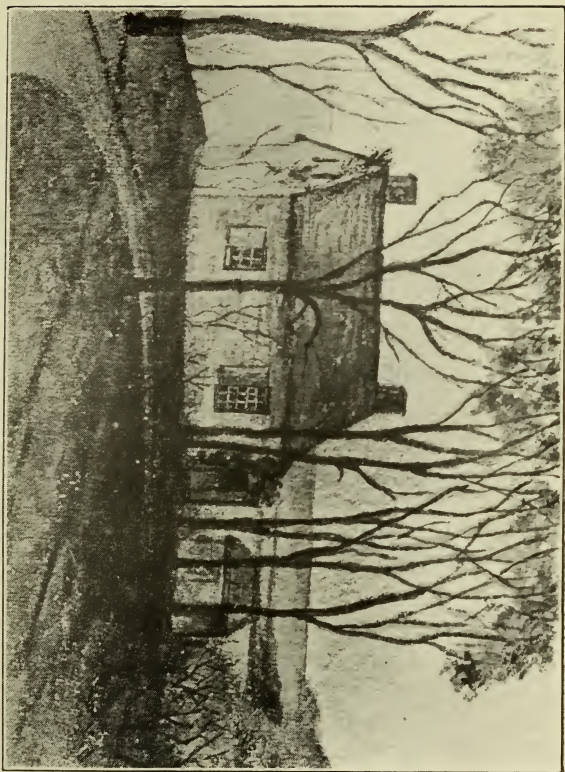
The northeast portion of the town of Saugerties, between the Saw creek and the Hudson was a part of Albany county until 1767, as heretofore stated. Greene county was formed in 1800. This territory is what will afterwards be Malden and West Camp, with the adjacent farm lands. Starting from the mouth of Sawyer's creek, and proceeding north we first pass over the fields of the Brink farm until we reach what will in 1900 be the lands of John G. Myers. We have now reached the Major Dan Wolven grant, or Gottfried De Wolfen tract, as it is sometimes called. Almost the whole of this corner of the town was originally covered by patents or grants. The first was this of Wolven. On the north, adjoining, was that of Myndert Schutt. Bordering on the Schutt grant on the north was the long grant to Fullerton which reached from the Schutt tract to the county line at Wanton Island. The "Big Vly" was covered by one of the Meals and Hayes grants; Dederick Mauterstock had

a large triangular patent west of Fullerton, while reaching to the north end of the Washington avenue of 1900, from the north line of the corporation of Saugerties village was another large patent of Meals and Hayes.

But we will stop a moment at the stone house of Major Wolven and speak of what is to happen in October, 1777. Burgoyne will be surrounded at Saratoga by the patriot forces and must surrender, if not relieved. The farmers from this vicinity will be in the American army there. Sir Henry Clinton will send Gen. Vaughan up the river from New York on a marauding expedition to lay waste the country from which every available soldier will be either with Gen. Gates at Saratoga, or with Governor Clinton defending the Highlands of the Hudson. From where we stand we can see the smoke ascend when Vaughan burns Kingston, and his marauding vessels will come as far as here. On the opposite side of the Hudson the buildings of Gen. Petrus Ten-Broeck, the house, barn and out houses of Robert G. Livingston, and a house and mill of Chancellor Livingston will be burned the day after Kingston is destroyed. The next day another house of the chancellor will be burned, one of John Livingston, and three others belonging to neighbors. Then a house on the east side belonging to Judge Smith will be con-

sumed, when the British will cross to this side of the river. They will find here a sloop, or brig, at anchor and one on the stocks and burn them. They will land at this house of Major Wolven and set it on fire, but the fire will go out and the charred spot will be visible during the next century. A detachment will start for the Brink place, but before it reaches it a signal gun from Vaughan's ship will recall it as the news has reached Vaughan of Burgoyne's surrender and the vessels will come about and immediately proceed to New York. But, meanwhile, the wife of John Brink, whose husband is with the army at Saratoga, flees with her child and carries him all the way to Woodstock for safety.

This tract of Major Wolven reaches all the way along the river to a point just north of where next century will stand the store of the Ishams in the village of Malden, and to the bounds of the Myndert Schutt tract. On May 9, 1808, two hundred acres of it will be sold to Asa Bigelow and Samuel Isham for \$6,000. At this time Bigelow will have a general store in Saugerties on the site of the future Russell Block which he will own. In this store will be the first post office of the village and Bigelow be the first postmaster. Before this day there will be a tri-weekly mail from New York to Albany on the west side of



THE HOUSE OF MAJOR DAN WOLVEN.

the Hudson by the Old Kings Road, returning on alternate days, and letters and mail be left at the store of Cornelius Persen in Katsbaan. It is a long cry and distinct advance which before the century closes will see frequent daily mails in the village, and daily rural free delivery all over the town.

Soon after the purchase of the Wolven tract Bigelow and Isham will begin to build a frame store on the street, in Malden, leading to what will be afterwards the Isham dock. In 1814, they will build the brick store, afterwards to be known as the Isham store. This will be near the north end of the Wolven tract. In 1813, Bigelow will purchase of John Van Steenberg a part of the Schutt grant and on it in 1818, he will build a stone building still to be used in 1900 as the Blue Stone Co. office, having previously withdrawn from the partnership with Isham. Here is to grow up the village of Bristol, which will be called Malden, later, so as to secure a post office. From this place a turnpike will be built in 1826 to Palenville, and here will be established one of the most successful industries in this state in buying, selling and manufacturing blue stone. On November 6, 1815, Bigelow and Isham will sell the south end of the Wolven tract to William Myer, from whose heirs it will pass December, 1860, through

Russell N. Isaacs to Francis Pidgeon, and from him to John G. Myers.

Adjoining the Wolven grant on the north is that of Myndert Schutt. It reaches west to the Sawyer's creek and north to the Fullerton patent. The dwelling of Myndert Schutt was built about 1712 and will be standing down through the next century. Myndert Schutt married Sarah Persen, of the family at Saugerties who became the owners of the Meals and Hayes patent at the mouth of the Esopus creek, and their daughter Maria Schutt married Abraham Post, from whom the Post family, who will be so prominent in the early history of this village, is descended. Most of the Schutt grant passed into the possession of Abraham Post. Then Thomas VanSteenberg purchased 183 acres in 1757, so that at the time of our walk the tract is comparatively small.

From the Schutt grant north to the county line of 1900 is the Fullerton patent. It reached almost as far west as the patent of Meals and Hayes, which covered the "Big Vly," and contained about eight hundred acres. When the Palatines were brought over from England in 1710 by Governor Robert Hunter and settled at East Camp and West Camp in October of that year, Gov. Hunter was compelled to purchase lands for them. On the

east side of the river he purchased 6,000 acres of Livingston, but on the west side he could not find sufficient land available and covered with pines from which naval stores of tar, pitch, resin and turpentine could be made. After considerable negotiation he succeeded in purchasing this patent from its possessor, Thomas Fullerton, who was an officer in the Royal Custom's Service in Scotland. This tract had been granted by Governor Thomas Dongan February 28, 1687, to Robert Fullerton and lay southwest from Wanton island. On this Fullerton tract the Palatines were disembarked October 4, 1710, and gathered into three villages convenient to the pines called Elizabethtown, Newtown and Georgetown. These villages were only a mile apart, but as they were merely of log huts for those who were cutting pines for tar, etc., they perished when the enterprise was abandoned and the colonists scattered to become possessors of farms of their own. This was not as easy upon this Fullerton patent as it was a mile farther west upon the lands of Kingston Commons and most of the enterprising among the Palatines passed over and soon acquired farms from the trustees and mingled with and intermarried among the Dutch.

The name of Fullerton will long survive. There is in existence a map of General Bur-

goyne on which were located the places on the west side of the Hudson, where he meant to encamp his army on his march to New York after capturing Albany, provided he defeated our army. One of these encampments was to be at "Katsbaan near Fullerton." But

"The best laid schemes of mice and men
Gang aft agley."

Burgoyne came to Albany, but tradition says he rode a paroled prisoner in an ambulance wagon driven by "Oom Hans Myer," who afterwards kept the inn in this town, where, in 1900, his descendant, Wells Myer, will live, as told in a former chapter, and when this wagon was driven through Katsbaan on its way home Burgoyne was on his way under parole to England. It might be in place to state that a part of the box of this wagon is preserved in the Senate House in Kingston.

CHAPTER XVI.

GLASCO AND FLATBUSH BEFORE THE REVOLUTION.

We have now looked into the condition of the whole of the town which was settled before the Revolutionary war, except the peninsula formed by the Hudson river on the east and the Esopus creek on the north and west. This region is Glasco, Flatbush and Glenerie.

When Kingston Commons was originally laid out and mapped the woodland, mountainous and wild lands were divided into what was there denominated classes. The third, fourth, fifth and six classes covered the wild lands from the south bounds of the town to Albany county line covering the hills, some of the peaks of which were afterwards called Mt. Marion, Mt. Airy, etc. The seventh class lay on the east side of the Esopus creek and began at the mouth of that creek on the south side, and ran up the creek to Glenerie falls, (upper falls); then easterly to where the settled lands in Flatbush appeared, and thence north to a point northwest of where in the

next century will be the hotel of Schoentag. Thus the half of this part of the town was wild land and much of it will so remain until 1900. In this portion a grant of one hundred acres was made to Arent Tunis Pier. On this grant will be the site of the Glenerie of the future as it lies on the east and south side of the Esopus. The grant was dated December 5, 1688. This fine water-privilege will not be used to a great extent except the upper falls upon which a fulling mill and afterwards a paint mill will be erected. The middle falls will never be harnessed and little will be done with the lowest, or Glenerie falls proper, until about 1835, when Colonel Edward Clark will establish a white-lead plant there, which will be developed by his successors, Battelle & Renwick, into one of the best in the United States. Around it will spring up one of the most beautiful of small villages until the company will be absorbed into a great white lead trust, when the works will be abandoned, and the village be deserted and fall into ruin.

Our tramp will begin on the hill afterwards to be called Ury, and later Barclay Heights. This hill is reached from the village by crossing the Esopus on a scow ferry above the upper falls at Stony Point. Later another such ferry will run from the foot of the future MacCarthy street at Phillips' boat yard. The

wooden arch bridge of 1839, with its successor the iron bridge of 1874, will abolish these ferries. But during the summer of the latter year, while the iron bridge is building, this ferry will be re-established from Phillips' for a number of weeks. As we journey south from the top of the hill in these days of old we find first the lands of Edward Wood. Part of this property was purchased from the Meals and Hayes grant, but on March 4, 1734, he bought thirty-four acres of the trustees of Kingston Commons. During the Revolution a tavern will be kept here by Hendrick Schoonmaker for some years. In 1825, the property will pass into the possession of Henry Barclay, the founder of the future village of Saugerties, who will build his residence here and will live to 1851. In 1854 his dwelling will be torn down to erect the residence of Joseph B. Sheffield.

Next south is the land conveyed by the trustees to Tjerck Schoonmaker on March 4, 1734, the day of the conveyance to Wood. On part of this Mynderse Schoonmaker will live in 1900. West of this is the grant to John Legg, or Laig. This was made February 24, 1740. This will be the Richard C. Washburn place of 1900. Legg's descendants, Samuel Legg and William Legg, will be merchants at the upper landing soon after the

Revolution, and later a Samuel Legg, a descendant, will make a moderate fortune here as the manufacturer of a whip, known up and down the valley of the Hudson as the "Esopus whip," which drivers will consider indispensable.

To Peter VanLeuven on March 1, 1731, and to Andries VanLeuven February 6, 1747, and at subsequent times were granted large tracts of land further south along the river and west to the Esopus creek. These lands covered the Spaulding place of 1900, and reached to Glasco. They will remain for a century in the family and among the descendants. The site of the future village of Glasco is at present ungranted land, but on September 15, 1786, the trustees will convey a tract to Herman Minklaer which will reach along the Hudson beyond the south bounds of the coming village.

The river bank south was originally granted by Governor Dongan to Jan Mattysson & Company, in a patent dated February 13, 1688. In this grant were six hundred acres and it was divided into two hundred acres to Capt. John Spragge on the north; two hundred acres to Mattys Mattysson in the middle and two hundred acres to Claes Westphalen and Abel Westphalen to the south and reaching to Kalkoene Hoeck (Turkey Point). At this point it bound-

ed on the Haines grant which extended over into the bounds of the town of Ulster. But the patent lapsed in some unknown way and the tract became part of Kingston Commons. On January 22, 1722, the trustees deeded thirty-five acres on the north end of this tract to James Whitaker, whose lands are described as being over against Magdalen Island and bounded on the west by lands of John Laig. He also had seventeen acres lying west of a hill called "Rondebergh," while south of the lands of John Laig, and southwest of those of Whitaker, a tract of land had been granted to Lawrence Swart. Much of this property will remain in the possession of descendants of Whitaker during the next century until in the latter half it will be owned by Egbert Whitaker of this village.

During the Revolution, on August 24, 1781, the trustees granted to James Osterhoudt, Petrus Burhans, Samuel Burhans, Isaac Burhans and Abraham Burhans, all of Flatbush, all those lands situate at Flatbush south and east of a line running along the south bounds of Jacobus (James) Whitaker from a point on the road eastward to the Hudson. This grant extended south to the Haines patent. A very large proportion of this tract will be in 1900 in possession of the different branches of the Osterhoudt family and their descendants.

We have now tramped over the whole of the town which was settled previous to the Revolution. While the writer does not claim to have found the house of every settler, nor even to have located every original patent, grant, or conveyance of land he feels he has done so with as many of them as can be determined at this late day, more than one hundred and twenty-five years from the beginning of that war, and at least some two hundred and twenty-five years from the original settlement of the town.

He has found a number of tracts, lots and farms which he is unable to locate after long-continued search among old deeds, etc., which are, at least, one hundred and seventy-five years old. As a specimen he will mention sixty acres conveyed to Christian Fiero. He was one of the elders when the Katsbaan church was built in 1732. From him, probably, all those of that name in this town are descended. On June 14, 1728, the trustees of Kingston Commons granted him a parcel of land "at the southwest end of a place called Tryn Claesen Vlackten" (the flats of Catherine, wife of Nicholas), containing sixty acres. February 28, 1729, the trustees granted Johannes Everhard sixty acres adjoining, and on the same day sixty acres more to Daniel Miller adjacent to the land of Everhard, with the further de-

scription that it lay at the foot of a high hill. Here are one hundred and eighty acres of land. Where did it lie? There is no record of a subsequent purchaser. It was "flats." And it is noticeable that no upland was taken up until all the level land was. No one coming from low and level Holland secured anything else as long as level lands could be obtained. There seems to be no place from the Plattekill to the Greene county line where one hundred and eighty acres could be crowded in which he has not covered.

In 1803 and 1804 the trustees finally divided the commons, or corporate lands, among the inhabitants entitled thereto, and on December 13, 1816, assigned the funds in their possession to the supervisors and the overseers of the poor of the towns of Esopus, Saugerties and Kingston and then, after a corporate existence of one hundred and thirty years finally and permanently dissolved.

CHAPTER XVII.

THE LEGION OF HONOR.

Preceding chapters have brought the story of the town of Saugerties down to the beginning of the Revolutionary war. There were less than seven hundred and fifty inhabitants within the borders of the town in 1775, and of these not one hundred within the bounds of this village. Neither Malden nor Glasco existed. Not a soul lived where are now populous quarry villages. Katsbaan and West Camp had probably as many residents as they have to-day. And a few farmers were settled in Plattkill, Flatbush and Saxton.

Despite the fact that schools had begun to teach the English language it was rarely spoken. Public documents must needs be written in English. Nevertheless many made their wills in Dutch. Aside from this all business was in Dutch, as was all conversation. Among the Palatine settlers and their descendants were many who still spoke German, especially among those Lutheran families who had not intermingled with the Dutch. And the writer remembers Palatine German speech

among such families as late as the civil war of 1861-5. The services in the West Camp church were in German for many years, and when Rev. George W. Mancius came to Katsbaan in 1730, he preached at first in German. When he went to serve the church in Kingston in 1732, as colleague of Rev. Petrus Vas, the consistory of that church gave him two years to perfect himself in Dutch speech. He was a learned man of remarkable linguistic acquirements, being able to speak nine different languages. But German at the Katsbaan church was very soon superseded by Dutch, and in the latter language all the services were held until the coming of Rev. James David Demarest as pastor in 1808. When Rev. Dr. Henry Ostrander was settled in 1812, he continued English services with stated ones in Dutch for many who could hardly understand the English, or who were able to worship with less restraint in their mother tongue. But time changed it all. Down to the last generation there were many families in which Dutch was the language of the household, and even as late as 1900 the writer knew a number of homes in the town in which all family affairs were still discussed in the old tongue and around the table both parents and children used the speech brought from Holland almost three hundred years ago. But the next generation will know

it not. Dutch words and expression survive and will continue with Dutch force of character, but the tongue has become a memory along the Hudson.

Among those who were residing in 1775 within what is now the town of Saugerties were but two or three English families. All the others were of Dutch, Palatine, or Huguenot origin. Hence there was no prepossession in favor of England here. On the whole her government had been just and liberal until the advent to power of Lord North and his ultra Tory ministry. A conflict had been going on in the Reformed church for years which is known as the Cœtus and Conferentie strife, and which, in 1772, was decided in favor of the former. The Conferentie party wished the church to remain under control of the Church of Holland. The former, or Cœtus party, wished it to be American and free. This long strife had educated the Dutchmen in the principles of Americanism, although the conservative Dutch of this town were largely Conferentie. But Rev. Lambertus DeRonde, the pastor of the Katsbaan church during the Revolution, preached the sermon at the Synod which had united the factions and henceforth the Reformed Church was to be free from European control. This was in 1772, and when Lexington was fought, April 19, 1775,

three years of complete Americanism had had its influence upon the men of Saugerties. There was no village of size in the town. But the tavern of Abraham Post in Saugerties and the store of Cornelius Persen in Katsbaan had known many discussions of the principles at stake and the disputants were awake to the fact that Americans could and must resist tyranny, and were able to regulate their own affairs, while many were holding that they could govern themselves.

The high handed measures of the British Crown so thoroughly awakened the patriots of Ulster county that a meeting was held in Hurley on the sixth of January, 1775, to arouse the people to resist the demands of tyranny, and its encroachments. This was followed by a meeting of the patriots of the town of Kingston which then included the town of Saugerties. A Committee of Observation was appointed consisting of seven members, of which three were from Saugerties, viz: Johannes Persen, Christian Fiero and Egbert Schoonmaker. One of the acts of this committee was to see that merchants did not "sell or vend any East India tea." On April 19, 1775, occurred the battle of Lexington. As fast as messengers could ride the news spread over the land. On April 28, a call was issued for another Provincial Congress

to meet in New York May 22. Ulster county was represented by seven deputies. On May 29, this congress resolved that "a general association of freeholders and inhabitants be formed, and that the articles thereof be presented for signature to every inhabitant before July 15, 1775, and on that date those who refused, or neglected to sign them be reported." Ulster county promptly fell in line. Articles of Association for the patriots of the county were immediately drawn by which the signers bound themselves "to mutual defense of rights and liberties; to prosecute measures necessary to safety; to prevent anarchy and confusion; to preserve peace and good order and the safety of individuals and private property until a reconciliation between England and America, on constitutional principles, can be obtained."

The articles were circulated at once. In the whole town of Kingston there were five hundred and sixty-five signatures and only thirty-three refusals. The paper was duly brought to Saugerties and circulated. Who the messengers were is not definitely known at this late day. They were probably the three members of the General Committee, Johannes Persen and Egbert Schoonmaker of the present village of Saugerties and Christian Fiero, of Katsbaan. As the names of the signers in

Saugerties are included among those residing elsewhere in the town of Kingston the following list may be only approximately correct. But it can not vary greatly. They were Barent Burhans, Juren Bear, Adam Bear, Johannes Backer, Hendrick Backer, Petrus Backer, John Brink, John Brink, Jr., Cornelius C. Brink, Petrus Brink, Jacob Conyers, George Carle, Sampson Davis, Hezekiah DuBois, Hezekiah DuBois, Jr., Jacobus DuBois, Lucas DeWitt, Jurrie W. Dederick, Jacobus Dederick, William Dederick, Jr., Matthew Dederick, Johannes Dederick, Myndert Dederick, Frederick Eygenaer, Wilhelmus Emerick, Johannes Emerick, Christian Fiero, Christian Fiero, Jr., Stephanus Fiero, Hendrick Fiero, Hendrick P. Freligh, Peter Freligh, Samuel Freligh, John Freligh, Philip Felton, Johannes Felton, Jacob France, Michael Hoff, Martynus Hommel, Jerrie Hommel, Jr., Hermanus Hommel, Peter Hommel, Luke Kierstede, Christoffe Kierstede, Cornelius Langendyke, Luijker Langendyke, Dederick Mauterstock, Adam Mauterstock, Jacob Mauterstock, William Mauterstock, Johannes Mauterstock, Benjamin Myer, Benjamin Myer, Jr., Hendricus Myer, Christian Myer, William Myer, Petrus Myer, Johannes Myer, Jr., Petrus Myer, Jr., Petrus Low Myer, Tobias Myer, Teunis Myer, Stephanus Myer, Jacob Mower,

Johannes Mower, Jr., Petrus Mower, Leonard Mower, Nicholas Mower, John Monk, Harmon Minkelaer, Myndert Mynderse, Arie Newkirk, Jan L. Osterhoudt, Abraham Osterhoudt, Cornelius Persen, Johannes Persen, Jacobus Persen, Abraham Post, Jacobus Post, Martynus Post, Jan Post, Isaac Post, Hendrick Post, Jurrie W. Rightmyer, Johannes Rightmyer, Coenradt Rechtmyer, Hermanus Rechtmyer, Lodewick Russell, Hendrick Snyder, Benjamin Snyder, Abraham Snyder, Isaac Snyder, Jeremiah Snyder, Martynus Snyder, Egbert Schoonmaker, Samuel Schoonmaker, Hezekiah DuBois Schoonmaker, Hendrick Schoonmaker, Edward Schoonmaker, Tjerck Schoonmaker, Jr., Solomon Schutt, Adam Short, Petrus Sax, Phillipus Viele, John Valkenburgh, Christian Valkenburgh, Johannes Valck, Jr., Wilhelm Valck, Aaronhout Valck, Peter Whitaker, Jacobus Whitaker, William Whitaker, Barent Whitaker, Johannes Wolven, Johannes Wolven, Jr., Godfrey Wolven, Hendrick Wolven, Jeremiah Wolven, John Wolven, Laurence Winne, Peter A. Winne, Arent Winne, Benjamin Winne, John Wells, Hendricus Wells, Evert Wynkoop, Hezekiah Wynkoop, Tobias Wynkoop, Cornelius E. Wynkoop, Jurian Young, John Young and Jeremiah Young—one hundred and thirty-four in all. The only persons in this town who

refused to sign were Richard Davenport, William Eligh, William Fiero, Abraham Hommel, Peter Luecks, Josias Minklaer, Johannes Plank, Johannes Plank, Jr., Johannes Row, Frederick Row, Jr., Johannes Row, Jr., Johannes Trumpbour, and Nicholas Trumpbour. Thus there were but thirteen Tories in its borders.

The roll of signers of the Articles of Association has always been esteemed a Roll of Honor, and justly so. Almost every man on this roll entered the military service during the long war unless physically disqualified, or too old and feeble. And many who were old shouldered the musket as the rosters frequently show that fathers and sons served in the same regiment. And what is true of the military service is much more true of the above Articles. In many instances every man in the family signed and grandsire, son and grandson pledged themselves to a mutual defense of their liberty not only, but to individual peace and safety. And through seven long and discouraging years they nobly kept the faith.

CHAPTER XVIII.

THE REVOLUTIONARY WAR.

So far in the progress of events there was no purpose of independence. But events were moving apace. The Continental Congress assembled in Philadelphia concluded it would be wise to assume the aggressive. The invasion of Canada was determined on, and the Provincial Congress began to make provision for this. Among the regiments called was one from Ulster county, of which James Clinton was made colonel. It was placed in a brigade under command of Gen. Montgomery and reached Quebec where the latter fell, and the expedition returned.

In August, 1775, an act was passed reorganizing the militia. In this re-organization Ulster county was called upon for four regiments. This town was included in the northern, or First Ulster, and the command of the regiment was given at first to Col. Johannes Hardenbergh. The regiment had various vicissitudes, and when it was finally organized it entered the service under Col. Johannis Snyder, a native of this town, then resident of what is now

Kingston. He was the son of George Snyder, a Palatine who came to West Camp with the colony of 1710. When this regiment was officered, Oct. 25, 1775, the third company was under the following officers: Capt. Matthew Dederick; First Lieut. Evert Wynkoop, Jr.; Second Lieut. Petrus Eygenaer and Ensign Hendrick Myer. The fourth company was officered as follows: Capt. John Lucas DeWitt; First Lieut. Petrus Osterhoudt; Second Lieut. Tobias Myer and Ensign Petrus Brink.

On May 1, 1776, the regiment was reported ready. It was under the command of Col. Snyder. The company of Capt. DeWitt was now numbered the second, and consisted of a captain, two lieutenants, one ensign, eight non-commissioned officers and fifty privates. This company was raised in the south part of the present town. The company of Capt. Dederick, now number four, when the return was made had one lieutenant, no ensign, eight non-commissioned officers and forty-eight privates. This company was raised in Katsbaan and West Camp. The company of Capt. Jeremiah Snyder, which was raised in the western part of the town did not organize as soon as the others.

So far the contest had been resistance to tyrannical enactments in the vain hope of reconciliation with the mother country. But Parliament had by an act declared the colonies

in rebellion, had raised troops for its suppression and hired mercenary troops in Germany for subjugation. So the issue was joined.

On June 7, 1776, the die was cast. Congress that day "Resolved, that these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent states; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British Crown, and that all connection between them and the State of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved," and appointed a committee to draft a Declaration of Independence.

July 4, 1776, saw the immortal document signed. The world knows the result. The Provincial Congress of New York had been elected in April of that year. It met in May, 1779, at White Plains. When the resolution of Continental Congress of June 7, was laid before it, it was decided that it was of too great moment to be acted upon without a reference to the people. It was so referred and another election ordered. This new body met at White Plains July 9, 1776; the action of the Continental Congress was laid before it, and the same day the Congress at White Plains "Resolved, unanimously, that the reasons assigned by the Continental Congress for declaring the United Colonies free and independent States, are cogent and conclusive; and while we lament the cruel necessity, which has ren-

dered that measure unavoidable, we approve the same, and will at the risk of our lives and fortunes, join with the other colonies in supporting it." Messengers were sent through the colony to publish the declaration and the resolutions of approval, and the strife was on.

The writer has been permitted to make use of a diary in the handwriting of Christopher Tappen, of Kingston, now in possession of Mrs. William Mould, of the village of Saugerties. Mr. Tappen was a brother-in-law of Governor George Clinton, and was one of the delegates to the above congress, at White Plains. His diary begins with his journey from Kingston to that village at the session spoken of, on July 9, 1776, and is concluded on the 25th of the following January. It gives an inside history of the times and reveals the petty envies and jealousies which then, as now, mar human actions even when the motives are the most patriotic and Christian. Human nature is ever human nature. The writer has condensed the diary, and added explanations in parentheses.

Mr. Tappen writes: I set out on horseback from Kingston on July 9 to go to the Provincial Congress of New York, to be convened at White Plains; crossed the Hudson and put up at Poughkeepsie. I was there informed that Congress had removed to Harlem. My asso-

ciates Colonel (Levi) Pawling, Colonel (Charles) DeWitt, and Mr. (Matthew) Cantine, agreed to cross again to the west side of the river, so as to leave our horses in the English Neighborhood. (This is in the vicinity and northwest of Nyack.) On Friday, the 12th we arrived at Burdett's Ferry, (the ferry between Nyack and Tarrytown). Soon before we arrived a firing of cannon being heard by us we made all the haste possible to the ferry to know the cause thereof. When we came there two men-of-war, one schooner and two tenders were discovered standing up the river. We applied to the ferrymen to put us over, who were unwilling. This gave us an opportunity to see the firing of Mount Washington on the shipping. We arrived in New York on Saturday and were informed that Congress was sitting at White Plains. Returned to Burdett's on the Sabbath.

On Monday we crossed the ferry and arrived at White Plains at 4 p. m., when we went to Congress and delivered in our credentials.

Tuesday, 16 July, 8 o'clock p. m.:—By a motion of Mr. Robert Yates, Mr. Robert R. Livingston, Mr. John Jay, Mr. Gilbert Livingston, Mr. Paulding and myself were appointed a secret committee for the purpose of obstructing the channel, or annoying the enemy's

ships in their navigation of the Hudson. On the next day set out on the business and lodged at one Purdy's, near Croton's river. At six in the morning of Thursday we went to Peekskill where we waited for Messrs. Jay and R. R. Livingston who arrived at 4 p. m. Just then the ship *Rose*, commanded by Captain Wallace, and her tender came up and anchored near the Donderberg. Soon after the tender barge went to the west shore in order to pilferage the inhabitants there, but being disappointed by a couple of our men who lay in ambush and fired on them they returned to the tender, when the captain of the ship and four or five of the barges went ashore, killed five or six poor hogs, and set fire to the dwelling of one Holstead, which consumed in a few minutes.

Friday morning we went to Fort Montgomery in order to consult with General Clinton, Colonel Clinton and Captain Bedlow and lodged there that night. On Saturday General Clinton informed us that he had been to view a high point of land on the south side of Poop Loop's Kill, which he was of the opinion ought to be fortified, and insisted that we should go with him to view the spot, which we did, and advised him to fortify it; then we proceeded to Fort Constitution, from whence Gilbert Livingston and I went to Poughkeepsie,

On Sabbath Day we met with Captain Lawrence, and Tudor and Jacob VanZandt and divided our business into several departments and gave instructions for that purpose. The next day I received from Gilbert Livingston the sum of 223 pounds, 14 shillings and 8 pence to execute part of my instructions and set forth for Kingston. On Tuesday I employed several blacksmiths to make shevaux, etc. (A chevaux de-frise, or Friesland horse, is a heavy boom of timber traversed with large iron bars about six feet in length, and sharpened to a point. This boom was stretched across the Hudson at Polopel's Island, but had no forts or earthworks for its protection at either end. A heavy chain was also welded, and was stretched across the Hudson at West Point, the construction of which by this committee will be told in the next chapter. Forts Montgomery, Clinton and Constitution, prevented its removal until they were reduced in the autumn of the next year, 1777.)

CHAPTER XIX.

CONTINUATION OF THE TAPPEN JOURNAL.

The Tappen diary continues: Wednesday, July 25th, 1776—went to Sawgertjes; purchased a sloop of Benjamin Snyder, when Mr. White came up with me and delivered me a letter of Robert R. Livingston.

Thursday, 26th.—Purchased Low's sloop for 170 pounds; also pitch, tar and dry wood. After dinner went to the landing (Rondout) to order the materials on board of said sloop and buy some cannons. Mr. White came over with a letter from Mr. Yates on the subject that Mr. Livingston wrote to me about the day before, and applied to me for an order to impress teams, which I gave him. Also desired me to provide him with twenty axe men the next day to fell and hew timber at ten miles up the river. I understood that the officers of the First Regiment were convened at the sign of The Indian King in order to agree upon a set of officers for the regiment, to be raised under the command of Colonel (Levi) Pawling. Think as the militia were to train in a few days, that if I was to send out any men um-

brage would be taken. I went over to where the officers were assembled. Requested of the landlord to call out Col. (Johannis) Snyder, to whom I applied for twenty men of his militia; showed him my papers, of which he demanded a copy, an extract of which I made with my request at the foot thereof and carried into the room where he and a number of other gentlemen were sitting, delivered it to the colonel, who laid it down on the table. Major (Adrian) Wynkoop took it up and read it, when Major (Philip) Hooghteling took it up to read, when I withdrew from the room in order to wait for an answer, and went about some other business in the meantime. In about an hour thereafter waited upon the colonel, found the door open, seeing him engaged upon some other business with other people stepped back to the stoop at the door and sat down. Addressed myself to Major Hooghteling by asking whether they had fixed their officers. He answered me in a surly tone, "What do I know? — the Congress. Why have they not done it?" I answered "The Congress have done a part and left the other for you to do." To which he replied: "I do not know what you do there. I could send my negro Jug there and he would do as much as you all could." I asked the occasion of that affront. He replied: "You are a scoundrel." I told him "You talk

like a fool." Whereupon he gave me a back-handed stroke in the face which in a manner stunned me. However, I raised myself from the seat. He was ready for the second blow which I defended, took hold of him, and laid him over the stoop, when another person at his back gave him a lift, or push, so as to send me to the opposite side, he on me. I tumbled him from me, but he, taking me in the hair twisted my neck so as to have an advantage to strike me in the face. I defended every stroke until some persons took hold of the arms. I had to defend them when he beat me to such a degree that I was blind for twenty hours in one eye and but for a dim glimmer out of the other, which brought on a slow, weak fever so as to disable me for any business for eight days. On Friday, the next day, sent an express to Sawgertjes to know how the works were going on, and received a letter from Mr. White. On Saturday Egbert DuMond was kind enough to go to the landing to take account of the things sent on board of Low's sloops.

On Sunday I sent an express for Mr. Livingston to Poughkeepsie, and Monday evening Messrs. Livingston and Paulding came to my house where we consulted upon the business in my department and issued orders for this purpose.

By Wednesday, July 31st, my face and eyes were much better, but having great pains in my breast and stomach I was not able to go out. On Saturday, August 3rd, I went to the landing (Rondout) to buy canoes. Various minor matters occupied me until Friday, the 9th, when I attended Capt. Hazewood at the fire vessels and superintended the works. At nine in the evening set out for Fort Montgomery to examine the state of the provisions of which great complaints are made, and to bring up one of the fire vessels from thence. We arrived there at eight in the morning of Saturday and found Gen. Clinton's brigade on the march to a post on the north side of Kings Bridge. Went to examine new forts and ordered the fire ship off. We set out on Sunday from Fort Montgomery to Fort Clinton where we dined. After dinner we went to Poughkeepsie which we reached at ten.

On Monday, August 12th, went to the shipyard and ordered sundry things and after dinner formed a committee at Mr. Poole's. By order of this committee we went next day to John Schenck's and marked four hogsheads of West India rum belonging to one Franklin, as Mr. Schenck says, and consigned to one Mabbett, and that he has no particular orders to sell it. As Messrs. Jay and Yates had important business at home they requested leave of

absence. They departed leaving instructions to Mr. Livingston and me how to proceed in the meantime. I obtained leave on Saturday to go home and took with me money to pay accounts. On Monday I hired men to go to Poughkeepsie to bring three canoes there. Tuesday I went to Poughkeepsie and settled accounts and Wednesday wrote a letter to Mr. Yates concerning cannon. Went down to Davis' where the carpenters are at work upon logs for the chain. Next day I wrote a letter to the chairman of Kingston for ten or twelve carpenters to work upon the locks. They arrived to-day. I purchased a canoe of Capt. Hughes. On Friday put carpenters to work, and blacksmiths also. In the afternoon took some iron in a sloop to have it forged in Kingston. Mr. Livingston and I conveyed it there Saturday. I engaged Abram VanKeuren to work on the iron in making the chain. I returned to Poughkeepsie on Sunday and the next day inspected the fire vessels. Returned to Kingston on Saturday and back to Poughkeepsie on Monday, September 1st. As none of the committee came back to Poughkeepsie by Tuesday I resolved to go to the Congress in order to inform them of the state of our business. I reached Fishkill, where Congress was sitting, by ten on Wednesday. Next day I was taken sick with a fever. Although very

sick on Friday Mr. (Charles) DeWitt informed me that no session of Congress could be held unless I attended. This I did. I remained very sick until the next Wednesday, when feeling somewhat better I concluded to go to Mr. Clinton's (Gov. George Clinton's). I hired Capt. Jackson's sloop to bring me up. The next day I arrived home. I did not return to Congress until Monday, December 9th, when I set out for Fishkill, where it was sitting, in company with Col. DeWitt. (The remaining entries in the diary are unimportant and cease altogether on Saturday, January 25th, 1777.)

The above journal establishes the fact that the heavy impeding chain built to prevent the ascent of the Hudson by the British was made in Kingston. Links of this chain are still to be seen at West Point, and at Newburgh. The boom was made by carpenters at Poughkeepsie and the fire ships bought at Saugerties and Rondout.

And it shows the unfortunate jealousy existing all through the war between Congress and the army. This hampered the movements of Washington from year to year and caused constant insubordination. Cliques and cabals which were governed by political reasons, or envious ones, constantly interfered with military plans, changing leaders and depriving

armies of necessary men and equipment for political reasons, if not for worse.

Major Philip Hooghteling served as such in the First Ulster Regiment, which was raised in Kingston and Saugerties. The Third Ulster, spoken of as Col. Pawling's, was raised in the valleys of the Rondout and the Wallkill. The journal shows how an effort was made to secure enlistments from the above town also. It is certainly a tribute to the patriotism of Kingston and Saugerties that such a call was made by the Third, as the Fourth Ulster was largely a Saugerties and Kingston regiment. We can understand the opposition of the First to the application, if we cannot excuse it.

CHAPTER XX.

THE CAMPAIGN OF 1776.

In the chapter which preceded the last the writer narrated the story of the organization of the militia of the town, and especially of the First Ulster Regiment, in which the great majority of Saugerties men served. As there stated, it was reported to be ready on May 1, 1776, and under the command of Colonel Johannis Snyder, of Kingston, a native of Saugerties. The captains of the three Saugerties companies were Matthew Dederick, John Lucas DeWitt and Jeremiah Snyder. On July 4th the colonies were declared to be "Free and Independent States." Five days after, on July 9th, this action of Congress was ratified by the State of New York, and on the sixteenth of the same month the New York Convention resolved that one-fourth part of the militia of the counties of Westchester, Dutchess, Orange and Ulster be forthwith drawn out for the defense of the liberties, property, wives and children of the good people of this State. Then a resolution was passed urging those who remained at home to

render all necessary assistance to the families of those who enlisted, and another directing that all the men raised in the counties of Ulster and Orange be stationed in the Highlands on the west side of the river, to guard those defiles, the possession of which Brigadier-General George Clinton shall think most conducive to the safety of the State. The convention at the same time asked General Washington to appoint an officer to take command of all the levies on both sides of the river. Washington, having no one to spare, and having such confidence in Clinton that he deemed him the most suitable, nominated him to the command. This nomination the convention approved, a levy of one-fourth of the militia was made and Colonel Johannis Snyder called his regiment together to fill the quota required.

We are not concerned here with the difficulties met in filling this quota which arose over the services of a troop of horse attached to the regiment, etc., but must sketch the service rendered so far as concerns Saugerties men.

Meanwhile the Fourth Ulster, under Colonel Johannes Hardenbergh, in which were many from this town had gone to New York to aid in the defense of that city by Washington. On August 9th the colonel complained

to the State Convention of the destitute condition of the troops, and asked a supply saying, that his men were even willing to have the funds to purchase supplies deducted from their pay. The convention immediately ordered the supplies furnished on those conditions. This is worth noting to show the ardent patriotism of those who fought to secure our liberties.

Through all the disastrous campaign of 1776 which ended in the loss of the city of New York, Ulster county carried her full share. And while so many of her sons were fighting on Long Island one-quarter of those remaining at home were drafted for service in the passes of the Highlands. But arms were scarce for their equipment and it was determined to arm only those who were drawn for immediate service, and equip the remainder with lances. This exhibits the straits in which the patriots were placed.

Colonel Johannis Snyder proceeded to the Highlands to command the levies reaching there October 18, 1776. He found an order issued eight days before to detach three hundred men of his command, well armed, with three days' provisions, to proceed to Peekskill to continue in service three weeks. And on the 13th the field officers of the First Regiment had selected Major Adrian Wynkoop, of

that regiment to take command of the detachment.

On November 3d the Committee of Safety ordered the militia of Orange and Ulster counties to hold themselves in readiness at a moment's warning to oppose the invasion of the British on the west side of the Hudson. But the British made no attempt upon the passage during the remainder of 1776 after the capture of New York and confined their operations to a campaign in New Jersey. The coming of winter and the freezing over of the Hudson released most of the militia to their homes, and Colonel Snyder's regiment all returned as its term of service expired.

To understand this it is well to look for a moment at the constitution of the military forces. There were three classes of these. The first was the Line, as it was called, which would be called to-day the regular army, but in those days came to be denominated "The Continentals." These regiments were under the direct command of General Washington as Commander-in-Chief.

The second branch was the Levies. These were drawn from the militia regiments and sometimes by a direct draft upon the people for a specified term, and they could be compelled to serve outside of the state during their entire term of service.

The last class was the Militia. They could then, as now, be called to render service outside of the state for three months only at a time. "Every foot soldier must provide himself and appear and muster with a good, well-fixed musket, or fusee, a good sword, belt and cartridge-box, six cartridges of powder, a horn and six sizable bullets, a flint, a blanket," and sometimes a tomahawk. For want of these articles a fine of twenty shillings and prison charges was imposed until the fine was paid. At his discretion the captain was allowed and authorized to sell the delinquent's goods. "In case the offender be unable, or refuse to pay, and he have no goods to distress, he shall ride the wooden horse, or be laid by the neck and heels in a public place for not to exceed an hour."

The militia were called out when they were needed and kept as long as needed, and then permitted to return to their homes subject to another call. Sometimes a whole regiment would be called out for many months at a time, sometimes for but a few days, and this frequently during several months; and sometimes no call would come for a whole year. Sometimes a whole regiment would be called; sometimes one company; sometimes twenty or twenty-five men. Thus the same men might serve in two or three companies in

the same year and even in two or three regiments.

The counties were divided into districts, and each district placed under a colonel who was to see that every man liable was enrolled. Quakers, Moravians and United Brethren were enrolled, but could be exempt from actual service by paying an exemption fee. Towards the end of the Revolution this was one hundred pounds (New York currency), or \$400 per year. One miller to each grist mill, three powder makers to each powder mill, five iron makers to each furnace, three journeymen to each printing office and one ferryman to each public ferry were exempt.

Four times a year the militia must meet for training in specified localities and once a year a general training day was ordered for "all the soldiers within the government." All males between the ages of sixteen and fifty were liable for military duty and, in case of invasion, all between fifteen and sixty. Cases did arise where they were called out, if able-bodied, up to seventy.

The pay of a private was but \$6.66 per month and this not always in money, and if so often in money not current. He was also allowed one pound of sugar, two ounces of tea and one pound of tobacco a month besides his subsistence. If a slave enlisted and served

three years, or until discharged, he became a freeman. Thus the opening of the New Year (1777), which was to witness the most severe call ever made upon the patriotism and energies of this town, found almost every man and boy of its population who would carry a gun under arms.

CHAPTER XXI.

THE CAMPAIGN OF 1777.

The year 1777 was dark and discouraging as it opened upon the American cause. Washington had been driven out of New York and across New Jersey, and though he had won a notable success at Trenton on Christmas, the patriotic sky was gloomy. The invasion of New York from Canada had not taken place and Burgoyne had retired to winter his troops in Canada, yet it was known that the advance would be made the following summer, and it was expected in force. From whence would the patriots obtain troops? Those inured to war were with Washington in New Jersey and Pennsylvania and few but the militia were available.

All through the winter of 1776-7 preparations were going on. All over the valley of the Hudson and in New England lead was being run into bullet moulds and powder was made in small quantities everywhere. The militia constantly drilled, as never before, and at every store and church the discussion of their rights and wrongs and of means of resist-

ance was carried on. In the town of Saugerties the great places for discussion and debate were the store of Cornelius Persen, in Katsbaan, and the inn of Abraham Post, in what is now the village of Saugerties. But not alone here. In groups around the two churches in town, the one in Katsbaan and that at West Camp, successive Sundays heard the ceaseless story of the injustice of Great Britain and the determination to win the fight for liberty. Rev. George Wilhelmus Mancius, the pastor at Katsbaan, had died in 1762 and the next one to serve was Rev. Lambertus DeRonde, who did not come until 1780. But in these intervening eighteen years the people were regularly supplied by the pastors of Albany, Kingston and Catskill, now Leeds. All three of these were ardent patriots. But no one more fervently so than the pastor of the last named church, Rev. Johannes Schuneman. His father had been one of the Palatines of the West Camp colony in 1710, and the son had entered the ministry of the Reformed Church. Wherever he went he was on fire for liberty. Whether he led his people in worship at Leeds, or Cox-sackie, or whether he came to Katsbaan for Sabbath service his messages from the pulpit were not only those of religion, but the claims of patriotism and liberty. So his frequent visits to Katsbaan were occasions for the en-

kindling of a spirit of determined effort to achieve the independence of America from the control of Great Britain forever. He is the hero in a story very popular fifty or sixty years ago entitled "The Dutch Domine of the Catskills." So the year 1777, though gloomy as the opening months passed, found the people of Saugerties never so determined to win as then.

For the campaign Lord Howe asked of the British government a force of 50,000 men to cut the united colonies in two along the line of Lake Champlain and the Hudson river. To this end a powerful army was to come down from Canada to meet a force proceeding up the Hudson from New York. What was to resist this? New York State was then nothing more than Long Island with the valleys of the Hudson and the Mohawk. The opposition to Burgoyne and St. Leger would demand every soldier from the Mohawk and the Upper Hudson. The Lower Hudson and Long Island troops were with Washington in New Jersey. So the defense of the Highlands devolved upon the counties of Orange, Ulster, Dutchess and a part of Westchester. Once more the First Ulster took the field under Col. Snyder and went to the support of Gen. George Clinton. To show their entire confidence in Clinton the State convention passed resolutions

authorizing him to call out the whole, or any part of the militia whenever he deemed it necessary, and station them where he deemed best, and gave him power to impress carriages, horses, teams, boats and vessels whenever he deemed it necessary. For these he was authorized to draw on the convention for payment. Nor were these extraordinary powers ever abused. Faithfully and well did Clinton meet the expectations of his people, and when in the following July the new State of New York was constituted, George Clinton was elected by the people to the offices both of governor and lieutenant-governor. He declined the latter office and, by successive re-elections they continued him in the former for twenty-one years.

We cannot narrate nor review the campaign of this eventful year. During the whole summer the most of the First Ulster Regiment was with Clinton in the Highlands. Those were despondent days. Over all hung the cloud of Burgoyne's advance from Canada, and in July it became a fact. Schuyler had not the troops to put up a defense. But the axe of the woodman preceded the advance of the enemy and every step onward from Lake Champlain was obstructed by the felling of trees and the destruction of bridges, etc., so that it took him twenty-four days to march twenty-six miles. Meanwhile Schuyler was calling on Gov. Clin-

ton for reinforcements. If sent they could be only those of Ulster and Dutchess counties, and every man was needed for the defense of the Highlands. At last Clinton determined that the progress of Burgoyne must be stopped at all hazards and any cost and directed that the militia of the north end of Ulster and Dutchess counties be sent. They were placed under the command of Gen. Peter TenBroeck, of Dutchess, who resided opposite to Saugerties, on the Hudson.

Every able-bodied man was summoned to go to the relief of Schuyler. Down to fifty years ago tradition in the town had many tales of the events of the march. Many were afoot, a few drove wagons carrying members of the family and neighbors, and some were on horseback. One of these traditions gives the following incidents: Tobias Wynkoop was constantly urging a more rapid march and when they reached a spot from whence the cannonading could be heard he became excited over the possibility that the battle would be over and he not obtain a shot at the redcoats and Hessians. Ephraim Myer begged his father for permission to go along. His father told him he was too young to carry a musket. But at last the lad's entreaties prevailed and the father consented that he take his fife, as he was a skilful player. And the martial strains

of this were very effective in summoning the patriot farmers to follow upon horseback and even on foot. Before they had proceeded many miles enough had gathered for two companies and they were thus mustered. But arriving at Saratoga the musician quickly exchanged his fife for a musket.

One company was in charge of Orderly Sergeant Cornelius Wells, but arrived too late for much active service and was detailed to gather the wounded, and the wagon which Christian Myer had driven up became of great service as an ambulance. The orders for gathering the wounded were that they must first relieve those less severely injured and leave those mortally hurt until the last. One man was found seemingly dying, if not already dead. They rolled him over and left him. But before they had gone far the wounded man arose and followed them exhibiting a severe wound in his head which had stunned him. This ambulance wagon was one belonging to William Myer, who resided on the Germond place in this town. The wagon, in charge of his sons, Christian and Johannes, had conveyed many of the neighbors to Saratoga before it was thus detailed. When the militia returned Burgoyne is said to have ridden to Albany with the Myer brothers, and the wagon was ever preserved in the family on

this place, and afterwards in that of Hendrick Myer at Brabant, and is now in the Senate House in Kingston.

But this anticipates. In the meantime the summer had almost passed. Re-enforcements had begun to reach Schuyler. General Herkimer, the brave Palatine leader along the Mohawk, had fought and fallen in the bloody battle of Oriskany, but had stopped St. Leger and his Indians from joining Burgoyne. The battle of Bennington had been fought and won and on September 19th the two armies had met and the British advance had been checked by the first battle of Stillwater. For eighteen days there was no further movement. But all this time the Americans were stripping the surrounding region of all supplies. The action of the 19th was hailed with joy everywhere and the militia flocked to Saratoga. It is at this point that those of our town enter the scene and at the end of these eighteen days they were a part of two thousand men who appeared under the command of General Peter TenBroeck. †

On the 7th of October occurred the second battle of Stillwater, or Bemus Heights. Here our Saugerties militia were in the thickest of the fight in the attack upon the British centre, while the British right was being broken by the vigorous charge of Morgan's Virginia rifle-

men and the impetuosity of Benedict Arnold. This really ended the campaign and brought about Burgoyne's surrender ten days after.

His army was marched across New England, while Burgoyne was brought a prisoner of war to Albany. General Schuyler had entertained the captive general with honors befitting his rank at his country home near Saratoga, and invited him to dine with him and Mrs. Schuyler at their residence in Albany. Burgoyne wrote home of the gentlemanly courtesy and hospitality of Schuyler, and was ever after a friend of America in the British Parliament.

Tradition has always held that upon the return of the Saugerties troops from Saratoga they were given a welcome by barbecue at Asbury as they crossed the county line into Ulster, and were then escorted as they came down the Old Kings Road through the town.

Meanwhile the First Ulster Regiment, as an organization, was with Colonel Johannis Snyder defending the Hudson Highlands. The British left New York on October 3d by land and water. Following a circuitous route around the Donderberg their forces reached Forts Montgomery and Clinton by the rear. They were built for defense against a fleet and had but little to oppose on the landward side with the handful of troops under Governor

Clinton. On the afternoon of the sixth the British appeared and carried both forts by assault. Governor George Clinton escaped by sliding down a precipice and crossed the river in a small boat, while General James Clinton escaped to the woods. Two hundred and fifty patriots surrendered and their losses in killed were about one hundred, while the British lost three hundred killed.

When the chain and chevaux-de-frise had been forced the enemy proceeded up the river, and on the 16th burned Kingston. The next day they reached Saugerties and burned the buildings of General Peter TenBroeck and the Livingstons on the east side of the river. On the 22d they continued their devastations on the west side at Saugerties where they set fire to "two houses with barns and appendages," one of which was on the place of John G. Myers. Next day they burned a sloop in the creek and one on the ways here. It is said that armed troops visited the house now owned by Mrs. Frank Pidgeon foraging, but did not set fire to the buildings. Then hearing of the surrender of Burgoyne, they came about and returned to New York. This practically closed the campaign of 1777 so far as the Hudson valley was concerned.

CHAPTER XXII.

THE CAMPAIGNS OF 1778 AND 1779.

The bloody battle of Oriskany, fought on August 4, 1777, which cost the life of the noble old Palatine, Gen. Herkimer and the lives of one-fourth of his command admirably succeeded in its purpose. Not only was St. Leger and his Iroquois Indians prevented from making a junction with Burgoyne, not only was the Mohawk Valley saved from conquest, but the Indians were taught a lesson which they never forgot. Hereafter it was impossible for the British to raise an Indian army for allies.

But there was one sad result. The wives and families of the settlers in exposed places on the frontiers were open to the vengeance of skulking foes. At Oriskany more than one hundred Indian warriors had fallen under the muskets of frontiersmen and the tribes were thirsting for scalps in revenge. For this the scalp of a woman or a child would satisfy where none other could be obtained. And during the summer of 1778 exposed buildings everywhere were burned and the tomahawk dripped with the blood of defenceless women

and children. Toward this hostility they were skilfully cultivated by Sir John Johnson and other leading Tories.

These savages were led by two ferocious Tories, John Butler and his son Walter, and by the celebrated Mohawk chief, Joseph Brant. Brant had been educated among the whites and to his savage nature was added a cultivated mind. He has been held responsible for the atrocities committed by the Indians after the battle of Oriskany, but later historians have rescued his memory from undeserved obloquy. He opposed the bloody acts of his savage brethren, but they were led by two fiends in human shape, the Butlers, and wherever they appeared destruction and death marked their track. The warfare Brant would have conducted would have been as devastating as that of Sheridan in the valley of the Shenandoah, but he opposed the bloodthirstiness of his Indian brethren and their more savage leaders, the Butlers. From July to November, 1778, they carried on a merciless warfare from the valley of the Susquehanna northward. Whole settlements were given to the flames and from gray-haired women to infants in the cradle no mercy to age nor sex was shown. Only to mention the names of Wyoming and Cherry Valley is to call to mind the horrors of Indian warfare. These massacres

were in June and November of that year. The latter name recalls as well the cultivation and refinement which marked that village as its devotion to the patriotic cause. This warfare was not confined to New York and Pennsylvania. The tribes of Kentucky were then bitterly at war with Daniel Boone. The battle of Vincennes was that year fought with the Indians of Indiana. Readers of "Alice of Old Vincennes" will recall this story.

The British during that year made an expedition up the Hudson and captured Stony Point. Washington threw a force into West Point and sent "Mad Anthony" Wayne to recapture Stony Point in which effort he was dashingly successful. The writer is not able to establish it as a fact, but there seems evidence that Col. Snyder, with some of his regiment was stationed at West Point at this time.

During all these months of 1778, the frontiers of Ulster were menaced by bands of prowling Indians, with their often more savage Tory allies. In the autumn of this year, Brant appeared along the Ulster frontier carrying dismay and death. He ravaged along the mountain border of the town of Saugerties and through the Rondout valley.

In 1779, Brant made another raid and the scene this time was in the vicinity of Goshen, near where the bloody battle of the Minisink

was fought. Washington determined to stop these raids, and committed the task to Gen. Sullivan, for whom Sullivan county is named. The expedition consisted of four brigades, in one of which were four New York regiments, containing many Ulster county men. On May 4, 1779, they struck camp at Wawarsing under orders to march to Wyoming. He found Brant marauding at Fantine Kill, six miles distant. On his approach, Brant with one hundred and fifty men fled to the mountains. About fifteen people of Ulster county had been massacred by these Indians before Brant was driven away.

Gen. Sullivan was thorough in his work. In three weeks he had succeeded in completely subduing the tribes of hostile Indians, and so effectively taught the lesson, that they sued for peace and promised to bury the hatchet. From this time the Indian warfare was confined to predatory bands until the close of the war. They were only outcasts of the various tribes led by those more bloodthirsty allies, the contemptible Tory degenerates.

It is impossible to detach from this general account the part taken by Saugerties men. Under officers from different companies they were in constant service. Different detachments were out at different times watching the frontiers and scouting in the mountains of Ulster and Delaware counties.

Some time during this year of 1779 Capt. Jeremiah Snyder, who resided at Blue Mountain, with his son Elias, and three others were scouting along the Catskills watching some prowling Tories when Capt. Snyder and Anthony Van Schaick became detached from the rest of the party. As they were cautiously passing through the dense woods and under the brow of a cliff they were suddenly startled by the discharge of musketry and five bullets struck the rocks and earth near the captain. They looked up and saw the enemy on the cliff who ordered them to surrender. Their muskets were discharged and then they ran for their lives. Thirteen shots were fired at them, but they escaped unhurt.

There is in existence a pay-roll of a party of Saugerties men of Johannis Snyder's regiment who were under the command of Lieut. Peter Post, of Saugerties, who scouted for one month from April 3d to May 3d, 1779, along the eastern base of the Catskills. When their service was up Lieut. Post stopped on his way home to stay over night with a friend, a Mr. Wolven, who lived near Pine Grove on what has been known as the William H. Cunyes farm. After he had retired for the night a party of Tories and Indians surrounded the house and carried him off a prisoner to the mountains where he was detained for five days. Then he was

stripped of his uniform and released upon giving his parole.

The Rev. Dr. Anson DuBois is the authority for the following:

One Sunday morning during these years two families from Woodstock came to Katsbaan church to service. Each family brought a babe for baptism. There was a Tory at church who quietly slipped out before the close of service. When these two families were returning home, and were just above Unionville, they suddenly found themselves surrounded by Indians whom the Tory had put on their track. The men were made prisoners and the women and children left sitting in the wagon to get home the best way they could. The Sunday hat of one of the men was seized by an Indian who clapped it on his head and danced about the frightened women with wild grimaces.

The activity of Brant and his Tories and Indians along the Catskills kept the whole community excited. The Tories were particularly embittered because the store of Cornelius Persen in Katsbaan had been for years the meeting place of the patriots and on one of the raids of Brant it had been determined to seize Cornelius Persen. A friendly Indian named Nachte Jan (Night John) whose wigwam was on Persen's land and who felt indebted to Persen informed him of the scheme and Persen

left home every night while his patriotic neighbors watched with him his house and store from points in the adjacent woods and fields. The blow of Sullivan relieved the situation.

With the close of 1779 the demand for active service upon the men of this town practically ceased. There were a few calls for short service, and many of the militia had enlisted either in the Continentals, or were serving in the Levies. But the militia had almost no summons thereafter.

CHAPTER XXIII.

PATRIOTIC DIVINES.

During the war of the Revolution the Reformed Dutch Church of Kingston had as its pastor the Rev. George J. L. Doll. He was an earnest preacher, but a still more earnest patriot. His pulpit often rang with notes less suggestive of the gospel of peace which in less stirring times he delighted to preach than of a summons to arms. Many an ardent exhortation fell from his lips to the struggle for civil liberty and the rights of free-men which was then on.

In the earlier years of the war the church of Katsbaan had no settled pastor. But the pulpit was pretty regularly supplied by Domine Doll and by the Rev. Eilardus Westerlo, of Albany. Both of these men were full of the patriotic spirit and earnest in advocacy of the cause. But the preacher who more frequently than the others supplied that pulpit was one who was a veritable Boanerges, a son of thunder. He was the Rev. Johannes Schuneman, of Cocksackie and Catskill, now Leeds. His father was one of the Palatines who

settled in West Camp in 1710 where the domine was born.

The year 1780 was comparatively a quiet one in the Hudson river valley. This was the year of Arnold's attempt to betray West Point, but the region about Saugerties was in comparative peace. Domine Schuneman continued to come down to Katsbaan to supply the pulpit. And just here a fuller tribute to this patriot should be given. He lived, as a former chapter said, at what is now Leeds. Between there and Katsbaan church is a distance of ten miles and at that time it was largely wooded and much of it a dense forest. He was intensely hated by the Tories because of his ardent patriotism. And he hated the enemies of his country and never lost an opportunity to denounce them. From Leeds to his other charge at Coxsackie was a distance of twelve miles and much of this way too was along a forest road. But the domine feared nothing but his God. No foe lived who had any terror for him. He was short and corpulent and was marked with the small-pox. He was a dead shot with the rifle and his enemies knew it. And that rifle was his constant companion. He always took it with him into his pulpit during these years and when arising to preach set it close at his side after carefully examining the priming.

The Rev. Dr. Henry Ostrander said of him :
“ His voice was one of great power and compass. His distinct and impressive tones, his natural and vigorous gesticulation and the manifest fervent kindliness of his spirit conspired with the eminently evangelical character of his discourses to render his preaching effective. The Revolutionary troubles called into full exercise Domine Schuneman’s intense patriotism, in connection with his heroic and self-sacrificing spirit. The district of country in which he lived was the theatre of great commotion and horrid cruelty. So deeply convinced was he that the interests of religion, as well as the civil interests of the country were bound up in the great struggle that he gave himself up to it, in his appropriate way, with all the earnestness and energy of a ruling passion. * * *
He knew well that he was looked upon by the enemy as a prize of more than ordinary value ; but nothing daunted by this he never withheld any good service in aid of his country’s interests which it was in his power to render. He was armed night and day with instruments of death for the defense of his own person ; but his main trust was in the living God.” No tidings of disaster disheartened him, no impending danger terrified him, no warnings or entreaties to keep out of the way of imminent peril made any impression on him. And he

kept up his course unmoved and unharmed during all these years of war riding every Sunday along his wooded roads with his trusty rifle, and his fervent sermons inspired the discouraged patriots until in 1783 the glorious battle was won.

“The Dutch Domine of the Catskills” and his patriotic services should never be forgotten by the people of this town and this region. His was a strenuous life and he inspired those with whom he came in contact with his enthusiasm. His services at Coxsackie and at Leeds were regular, those at Katsbaan were special, but very frequent. And more so during the years when the Upper Hudson was the theatre of war. He preached up to within six days of his death, which occurred May 10, 1794, in his 82nd year.

This year 1780 saw the church in Katsbaan receive its second pastor the Rev. Lambertus DeRonde. And it is remarkable that his ardent patriotism too was the cause of his coming. He was one of the pastors of the Collegiate Dutch churches of New York city, which was then occupied by the British. His sermons had long been severe upon the course of the British government and its brutal treatment of its prisoners of war. At last he dealt with the matter in plain language and the British commander sent him from the city and up the

Hudson. He came to Katsbaan and was its pastor for six years.

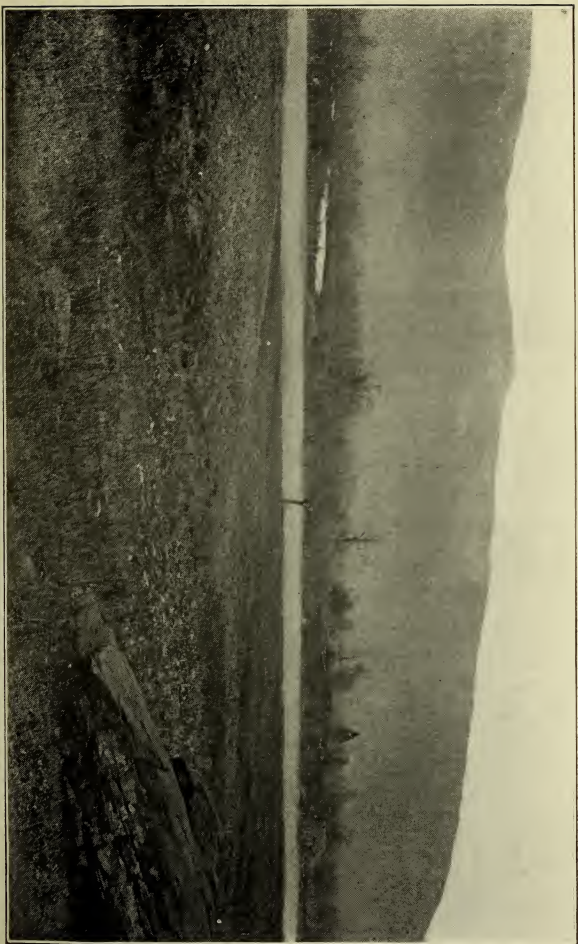
The cause of the patriots was greatly strengthened by the course of the ministers of the gospel before the opening and during the continuance of the long war. None were more ardent advocates than they. The services of such men as Witherspoon in Congress were indispensable and the valley of the Hudson during those "times that tried men's souls" was especially fortunate that, with no uncertain sound, such men as Doll, DeRonde and Schuneman inculcated the doctrines that "all men are created equal and that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights, that among these are life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness. That, to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed."

And when to such steadfast doctrine was joined a fearlessness and courage such as "The Dutch Domine of the Catskills" possessed, and in such an aggressive personality, men were compelled to take their stand whenever and wherever he came in contact with them. It resulted in making this region as thoroughly patriotic as any spot in all America during the long war.

CHAPTER XXIV.

AN INDIAN AND TORY RAID.

The principal event of the year 1780 in the town was the capture of Capt. Jeremiah Snyder of the First Ulster Regiment and his captivity in Canada. As military operations in the early part of this year were suspended along the Hudson the militia were at home at their agricultural labors. On Saturday, May 6th, Capt. Snyder and his son Elias, then in his eighteenth year, were engaged in getting ready a field near their house at Blue Mountain for planting corn. The field was bounded on three sides by the primeval forest. Father and son were separated by nearly the length of the field, which was the long white strip of plowed land running across the accompanying illustration. This was open on the north and towards the house. All at once a terror seemed to possess their horses, and the next moment three distinct parties of Indians and Tories painted vermillion appeared from the three wooded sides of the field. The captain and his son abandoned the horses and fled towards the house where the way was still



FIELD WHERE CAPT. SNYDER WAS CAPTURED.

open. Then the six Indians in the rear, among whom were the notorious John Runnip and Shank's Ben, raised the yell and rushed after them in pursuit. As they neared the house they found themselves cut off by three Tories who came over the hill in the rear of the house, at about the spot where the snow banks appear. Completely surrounded, Elias surrendered to a tall fellow named Hoornbeek, who was with Ben's gang, while the captain was seized by Runnip. A dispute arose between the parties nearest the captain as to who was entitled to the prisoner, because of the reward the British offered for captives, which came near a settlement as one of the disputants struck at the captain with his tomahawk to obtain his scalp. The blow made the captain reel and cut him deeply near the ear. He attempted another, but Runnip parried this just in time to shove aside a spear thrown by a third at the captain.

All this was observed by the women of the family from the house, and they fled with the children to the woods. The united bands of savages ransacked the house and piled upon a heap its contents, especially the pork, clothing and maple sugar. The leader then demanded of the captain four guineas which had been paid him by a Tory a few days before, saying he knew they were in the chest. The key was

delivered him, but the impatient savage split the lid with his tomahawk. The number of guineas was correct, but in his eagerness he overlooked one in the chest, and one rolled away on the floor. But he obtained two and \$200 in Continental bills. By this time the outbuildings were ablaze. Then Capt. Snyder begged that some things be left for his wife and children. Permission was granted, and some were carried out. They were soon ordered to desist, and the house was fired. Then, taking the captain and two sons, they set out for the mountains. Upon urgent pleading of the captain and Elias, the Tories finally released Ephraim, the younger son, who was lame and only nine years old. And another act of humanity is worthy of mention. As they proceeded the women were discovered hiding in the bushes, but were not molested. After a while a halt was made, and the captors proceeded to divide the plunder and paint the prisoners. Then all moved on in Indian file.

Nothing had been allowed the prisoners, and in their ordinary attire they were marched on and soon became footsore. They climbed the Catskills in an oblique direction from what is now Palenville, and passed between the two Mountain House lakes to the east branch of the Schoharie kill, which they forded and then camped for the night. The next morning

their fears were relieved by Runnip, who told them that they would not be hurt unless they attempted to escape. He intended to take them to Niagara, and would be kind to them as far as circumstances would permit.

It was now Sunday morning. The Tories and Indians separated, the former taking the \$200 and the guns and the latter the prisoners and the rest of the booty. Runnip now assumed command and led the party to a depot for provisions built in a ravine of hemlocks on a scaffold formed about ten feet from the ground and supported by two hemlocks and a crotch. This depot was near the head of the Schoharie kill. Monday was wet, and they remained in camp. Runnip produced the papers he had obtained from the captain's chest. He threw the smaller ones into the fire and preserved the larger. Among the former were many important memoranda relating to the military operations of the patriot army which it was well should not be read by the enemy. Among the latter were the captain's commission and some deeds. (About twenty years ago the writer learned that the commission was in the British Museum, and he made an effort through the then Secretary of State, Hon. Frederick T. Frelinghuysen, to obtain them for the descendants of Captain Snyder. The effort failed, but copies of some valuable papers

relating to the capture and their escape were secured.)

Tuesday morning at daybreak the luggage was divided into eight packs and each of the Indians shouldered one. Then Runnip and Hoornbeek, the owners of the prisoners, made a subdivision and Captain Snyder and Elias shouldered their packs. Hoornbeek after a little pitied the boy enough to relieve him of one-third of his load.

Towards sunset that evening they encamped on one of the branches of the Delaware. The Indians separated, some to search for potatoes on the abandoned fields of white settlers and some to build an elm canoe. Two remained near at hand repairing their mocasins, having left their tomahawks at a little distance. The moment when a successful attempt at escape might be made seemed at hand. Elias was just preparing to spring at the tomahawks when four Indians returned and thwarted the design. As they returned to their elm, they took Elias with them.

The canoe was finished by noon of the next day and in it the whole party of ten embarked with all their baggage. Three miles down stream a small timber canoe was discovered and two Indians with their baggage took possession. They floated on down that afternoon about twenty-four miles and the next

day sixteen miles farther until the junction of the east and west branches of the Delaware. At this point the canoes were abandoned and the march was resumed. After proceeding five or six miles Runnip was suddenly taken very ill. A rattlesnake was killed, cleaned, skinned, boiled into a soup and eaten, both soup and flesh by Runnip, and he was a well man.

At noon on Saturday the Susquehanna was reached and another canoe was constructed from the bark of a large chestnut upon which they floated sixty miles down to Tioga Point. Here a young elk was shot which afforded a welcome change of food. They left their canoe here and proceeded on foot along the Chemung river and passed the breastwork which the Indians had thrown up the year before to resist the invasion of General Sullivan. Between the Indian breastwork and the Genesee Flats, on Sullivan's route, a mound was passed at the side of the path. "There are your brothers" said Runnip in Dutch as he pointed to them. They were the graves of a scouting party of thirty-six men which had been intercepted and killed by the Indians. In the vicinity of this mound they fell in with a pack horse which had wandered from the army and had wintered in the wild grass on the Chemung flats. He was a small

chunky bay, low in flesh, but apparently in good heart. By this time the feet of Elias were covered with large blisters, which almost prevented walking. One day his sufferings became so acute that he was about to drop. For such things the Indians have no sympathy, nor any remedy but the tomahawk. Providentially they halted for the night an hour before sundown that day.

On the morning of Sunday, May 21st, the party reached Genesee Flats and met there the first white men they had seen since their captors had separated. They were Tories and neighbors of Captain Snyder. Their names were John Young and Frederick Rowe. Young had lived for a number of years within a mile of Snyder and now he had a long conversation with him. Rowe did not utter a word. The party forded the Genesee river through water up to their arms. Then, never stopping to dry their clothes, they marched on a dozen miles and encamped for the night. Soon after a white woman of about twenty-five years, with a child in her arms came to the camp with an Indian who was her husband. She enquired in English who the prisoners were and all the circumstances of their capture, destination, etc., and then volunteered the story of her life. In the French and Indian war, as a small child, she had been cap-

tured and had remained with them ever since. She knew not from whence she had come, nor who she was. She was a woman of intelligence despite her surroundings and her husband seemed a chief. Her face after all its exposure to the elements still retained a measure of beauty.

On the 24th of May they camped on a stream about thirty miles from Niagara. Here the Indians stopped to fish and the younger ones drove the fish down the stream so that the older ones could spear them. A species of sucker was caught averaging three feet in length. The next morning a passing band of Indians compelled the captain to give them his coat and they walked away with it. Not long after they met a band of Indians and squaws and the squaws robbed them of their hats. A little later they met two more squaws, one of whom was the sister of Runnip. Their greeting was very joyful and the women extended their goodwill to the prisoners whom they took cordially by the hand. They spent the night about four miles from the fort and on the morning of May 26 marched over towards it. They passed through an encampment of several thousands of Indians and the youths and squaws armed with clubs tried to strike at them as they went by, but Runnip and their captors carefully guarded

them from the gauntlet. They were soon safely within the gates of Fort Niagara. The fort, though to be a prison, seemed a haven of rest to the weary captives and within the stronghold they gradually recovered from their exhaustion.

CHAPTER XXV.

IN CAPTIVITY IN CANADA.

By the circuitous path from Saugerties to Fort Niagara Capt. Snyder and his son Elias had journeyed more than five hundred miles. They had experienced but one rainy day when they rested under a scaffold of hemlock at the head of Schoharie creek while the Indians lay wrapped in their blankets on the naked earth. They had been fairly well fed and of food which consisted largely of suppaan, or unbolted Indian meal, boiled with dried peas. The pork which had been foraged from the premises of Capt. Snyder had been carried with them until it was eaten. An elk had been shot and a part of a deer taken from wolves, otherwise they had had no game but muskrats. But they could not join their captors in a meal upon muskrats.

The Indian who had almost tomahawked the captain was his barber now and shaved him regularly twice a week. He was quite an expert with a razor. The prisoners were painted on the first and second days of their captivity and then not again until they reached the

Susquehanna. After this they were painted regularly every morning. All were generally silent on the march and the little conversation had was in broken Dutch. Runnip told Snyder of a proposed raid into Shawangunk after higher officers and in July Snyder met some more recently taken prisoners who told him that they had met Runnip on his way to Shawangunk. A year after this Capt. Snyder met Capt. Anthony Abeel, of Catskill, also a captive in Canada, who told him the result of the raid into Shawangunk. The officers wanted were not captured, but some negro slaves were seized. These rose in the wilderness and slew their captors, among whom was Runnip himself.

Fort Niagara had been built by the French during their long control of Canada and had been one of their strongholds. Since Canada had become British the latter had increased the strength of the fortifications until it was a seat of their power. It was at the outlet of the Niagara river into Lake Ontario. About six or eight acres were inclosed about the fort within which the British commander had erected a handsome residence. This was now occupied by Col. Guy Johnson, son-in-law of Sir William Johnson, of Johnstown. To him the Snyders were brought for an interview. He was a short, stout man, about forty years

of age, of stern countenance, and a haughty demeanor, dressed in British uniform, with powdered locks, cocked hat and sword by his side. He ordered all served with a glass of rum, the Indians first. Then Runnip delivered the captured papers to Col. Johnson and gave a succinct account of the captives and the place where they were taken. Johnson then inquired the news of the frontiers and Runnip replied that the British fleet had ascended the Hudson as high as Kingston; that he and his comrades had been at Kingston Point and witnessed it. Then turning to Capt. Snyder, Johnson inquired: "Do you know anything about it?" Deeming it prudent not to contradict the Indian the captain said, "It may be so, but we do not know." Various questions were asked relating to the conduct of the war, after which Runnip arose and made a speech in his native tongue of some ten or fifteen minutes, which a well-educated Stockbridge Indian rendered fluently into English. As far as the captain could gather it the purport was that the quarrel and war was between the British and Americans and the Indians demanded to be well paid for their help. Johnson replied that they would be rewarded with rum, provisions and corn; but they must not give any to the Indians who hung around the fort.

After this was settled Runnip took Capt. Snyder by the hand and placed it in that of Col. Johnson thus handing him over. The same ceremony was repeated as Elias was transferred. They were then conducted to the guard house on the top of the wall, where they were confined for a week. On the third day a Tory named Rowe, a sergeant in the British army, paid them a visit. He had been brought up a short distance from Snyder's residence in Saugerties, and called to enquire about his friends and relatives in that neighborhood. He was very civil, and appeared to commiserate their condition. They were not allowed any private conversation. About this time they were each presented with a frock coat of coarse Indian cloth.

While in the guard house they were visited by the celebrated chieftain, Brant. He was a likely fellow, of a fierce aspect—tall and rather spare, well spoken—and apparently about thirty years of age. He wore moccasins elegantly trimmed with beads, leggings, breech cloth of superfine blue, a short green coat with two silver epaulets, and a small, laced, round hat. At his side hung a beautiful silver mounted cutlass, and his blanket of blue cloth, purposely dropped in the chair to show his epaulets, was gorgeously decorated with a border of red. Brant's language was very insult-

ing. He asked many questions, and, among others, from whence the captain came? When he answered that he came from Esopus, Brant replied, "That is my fighting ground." At the close of the interview he addressed Elias and said: "You are young, and you I pity; but for that old villain there I have no pity." As he said this he pointed to the captain.

At the end of a week they were removed across the river and with three other white prisoners put into the hold of a twelve-gun vessel on Lake Ontario. Sergeant Rowe repeated his visit, and presented the captain and his son with second-hand hats, while a humane Tory named Birch, who had lived on the east branch of the Delaware, generously offered to supply their wants. He had been well acquainted with Benjamin Snyder, a brother of the captain, and seemed anxious to requite former kindnesses of that brother. During the afternoon of Friday, June 2nd, the vessel got under way, and when off from the wharf, the prisoners were allowed to come on deck. On Sunday afternoon, June 4th, they were put ashore on Carleton Island at the foot of the lake. In a small fortress on this island they were confined about three days of rainy and foggy weather, when they were transferred to boats and sent off towards Montreal under

guard of Tories from Sir John Johnson's battalion. On their way down the St. Lawrence they stopped at Ogdensburgh, where they received on board a female prisoner with five deserters from the American army. A heart-rending scene was witnessed as the woman was separated from her husband, who was detained a prisoner at Ogdensburgh. At Cote du lac, about forty miles from Montreal, they were landed and confined in the guard house for an hour. Re-embarking, they were carried with the current to La Chine, which they reached June 12. From this place they were marched on foot to Montreal, a distance of nine miles. The poor female was released as soon as she arrived. By noon the captain and his son had quarters assigned them in the Prevot. Here in this dismal and disgusting den they were confined for months.

CHAPTER XXVI.

CAPTAIN SNYDER'S ESCAPE.

The Prevot at Montreal was a large dismal looking place of stone, with great windows, and it served not only as a prison for American soldiers, but for criminals of every description. In a room twenty feet by sixteen, in the second story, forty Americans, military prisoners, were closely shut up until August; and their sleeping apartment was still smaller. It was but an entry or gangway thirteen feet long and eight wide, and in this the forty were stowed at night in two rows with heads to the wall and feet interlaced. Sometimes when the prisoners were many at least fifty were crowded in. Their jailer was a humane man who had married his wife in Albany and did as much for them as he could.

About the first of August they were taken before Gen. M'Clean. Those who could procure recommendations from loyal Canadians were released upon parole. But neither the captain, nor his son could do so. Gen. M'Clean finally sent away the captain to labor on the island, retaining the son as a hostage. At the

end of ten days he had so far ingratiated himself with the one in charge, Sir William Grant, that he was able to secure the liberation of his son.

On the night of Oct. 8th six of the prisoners escaped. As a result all were again confined in the Prevot. Here they remained, without stockings, under a cruel Hessian keeper, who beat his prisoners with a sword, until June 13th following. After a time Capt. Snyder succeeded in obtaining some indulgence when this Hessian learned that he and his son were of German descent from the Palatines who had come to West Camp. Their time was occupied in cards, except the large share devoted to clearing themselves of vermin which infested the jail.

On the thirteenth of June, 1781, Col. James Gordon, of Ballston, was brought in a prisoner with others. Through his influence Capt. Snyder and son, and Capt. Anthony Abeel and son were liberated on parole and billeted among the Canadians on the island of Jesu, sixteen miles above Montreal. Here they were not treated well, but better than in the prison. They remained here until the first of December when all of the prisoners here, of whom there were twenty-one, were confined in one house. After a few days things were relaxed; but it was not until Christmas that they first began

to taste the blessings of good treatment and cleanliness. During the winter they were presented with a roll of cloth by a compassionate Quaker. This they made into clothes themselves after a fashion. The following summer they obtained work among farmers and mechanics and spent the winter again at cards. An Irish prisoner had somehow obtained a copy of Pliny's Epistles which he gave Capt. Snyder and these furnished his sole intellectual enjoyment.

With the coming of the spring of 1782 the prisoners began to make plans for escape. The captain objected because of his parole. But it was urged that he was absolved from this as the British commander had broken his promise by locking them up in the house in December which had released the obligation. Then Elias declared that he would desert at all events and his father yielded. Preparations were made. Some leather for moccasins was bought. A passport to Montreal was obtained. While there a pocket compass was bought and wine to celebrate the Fourth of July. And when that day arrived twenty faithful Americans met in Capt. Snyder's quarters and commemorated the day in four gallons of wine, two of rum and other incentives to what was then considered a proper spirit.

On the evening of September 10th, 1782,

the attempt to escape was made. At a concerted point Capt. Snyder and Elias, Jonathan Millett, of Stonington, Anthony Abeel, of Catskill, and James Butler, of Philadelphia, set forward for the lower part of the isle. Here they found two boats which they lashed together. About three miles below there was a rapid and as the night was dark Snyder, Abeel, Millett and the baggage were landed, while young Snyder and Butler, having separated the boats, were to navigate them as well as they could to a point below the rapid. They succeeded in passing without accident, but missed those who had gone by the shore. The night had nearly passed before they were landed on an island ten miles below Montreal. Their boats were drawn up into the long grass and they lay all day in their wet clothes waiting for the night.

After dusk they took the boats and crossed to the east side of the St. Lawrence, and by daybreak they had reached the river Chambly. Here they lay all day in an old hedge. After sunset they found a canoe and came across. But by an oversight they had lost their axes, the only weapons they had. Conceiving themselves beyond danger, they now advanced by daylight, passing around all the settlements except one through which they walked armed with clubs. We cannot follow their perilous

journey through the trackless wilderness to the headwaters of the Connecticut River, and the straits to which they were brought for the want of food. Almost starved, Elias found a thigh of a moose stripped of all but its sinews, which they burned and ate of for two days. Some days after they found a frontiersman at work in a field and obtained a loaf of bread. That night they slept at the house of a Mr. Williams, who made them eat a moose pie prepared for the family supper. Neighbors came in with a magistrate, who examined them and then furnished them with passports to Gen. Bailey. The people of New Hampshire were exceedingly kind to them, and provided for all their wants. They reached Gen. Bailey's quarters on Sunday, September 29. He provided them with shoes. After two days there the general fitted out the captain with a horse, and he rode home through Massachusetts and Connecticut, crossing the Hudson at Poughkeepsie. The rest came on foot and crossed at Kinderhook.

On his way home Capt. Snyder had an interview with Governor George Clinton on the 6th of October. The writer has a copy of the official record of the examination. It was concerning the authenticity of the rumors that the British in Canada were preparing for another invasion of this State, by the way of

Lake Champlain and the Hudson River valley. We now know that no such move was in preparation, as the commissioners of Great Britain and the United States were negotiating for peace, and within eight weeks, on November 30, 1782, a preliminary treaty was signed. This was followed by the definite treaty of September 3, 1783, and the evacuation of New York by the British November 25, 1783, and the establishment of peace.

Captain Snyder in the interview and General Bailey and General Sullivan in contemporaneous reports refer to these rumors of another invasion. But it is now known that they originated in the troubles between the authorities of this State and New Hampshire over their claims to what is now Vermont. Vermont was clamoring to Congress for admission as a state into the Union and Congress was postponing such admission until the treaty of peace was signed. But the people of Vermont were restless and impatient, and that impatience manifested itself in constant collisions between the soldiers of New York and New Hampshire and in charges of sympathy of Vermont with the common enemy. This had led Captain Snyder's party to avoid Vermont on the way home, and to the circuitous route through New Hampshire. After the Constitution of the United States was formed Ver-

mont and Kentucky were the first states admitted to the Union.

There is in existence a return of Colonel Johannis Snyder of the levies raised in his regiment for the reinforcement of the army under date of July 10th, 1780. The three companies from the town of Saugerties are thus reported: Captain John L. DeWitt, 100 men; Captain Matthew Dederick, 91 men; Lieutenant Peter Backer, 70 men; in all 261 soldiers. Lieutenant Backer was in command of the company of Captain Jeremiah Snyder during the captain's captivity in Canada.

This ends the story of the connection of the town of Saugerties with the Revolution. The last two years had been quiet. The theatre of war had been shifted to the South, nevertheless as late as March 12, 1781, the trustees of Kingston Commons employed four men to constantly scout from the bounds of Hurley to the Albany (now Greene) county line near Palenville to watch the Indians and Tories. This covered the western border of Saugerties, and on April 3, 1781, they purchased three hundred pine trees for stockades.

Nor was this all. Thirteen days after this they purchased two hundred pounds of gunpowder for defense, and on June 4, 1781, the trustees appointed a committee to consult with Colonel Johannis Snyder for the defense

of the town. So late the annoying troubles with the Tories and Indians continued. At last the reward came. No hostile foot has ever trodden the soil of this town since that day. And when the history of that conflict was written it was recorded that not only had Ulster county and Saugerties furnished in full every call for troops made during the long war, but had exceeded that quota by more than one-third.

CHAPTER XXVII.

AFTER THE REVOLUTION.

No happier day was ever enjoyed by the people of this town than the day when the news came that Cornwallis had surrendered at Yorktown to Washington. It was a perfect day in October, most of the militia were home, for there were not many soldiers from this region in the army in Virginia and as all were farmers they were engaged in securing their fall crops. On most of the farms husking corn was in progress when a messenger on his way to Albany along the Old Kings Road brought the tidings. All work was immediately suspended and neighbors flew to tell neighbors the glad news that the long war was now, in all probability, over. To the tavern of Abraham Post, in Saugerties, and to the store of Cornelius Persen, in Katsbaan, most of the people found their way to ascertain the credibility of the tidings and to discuss the future. Tradition tells how Jan Top, a negro slave of Persen, came into the assembled crowd from the pile of corn which he was husking with a long ear from which he deliberately removed

every kernel, after which he held it up exclaiming "Here it is at last, and he is no more Cornwallis, but Cob-wallis." On the following Sunday all the region was assembled in the old stone church in Katsbaan to a service of thanksgiving and praise to Almighty God for the success which had crowned our arms. The pastor, Domine DeRonde, who had been the eloquent preacher of New York before he was driven from his pulpit there by the British, arose to the occasion, and his patriotic periods were long remembered by his auditors. The Dutch is a very expressive tongue and the domine, who had many old scores to settle, never used the language with acuter pungency, or greater effect.

But the rejoicings, the celebrations and the acknowledgments over, the conviction gradually dawned upon the people that all had not yet been secured. Money there was in plenty, but it was nothing but Continental currency, of which forty dollars were hardly worth one dollar in silver. Not a coin of what was in circulation was the product of a mint in this country except coppers. English and French guineas, Spanish joes, doubloons and pistoles and one or two French coins were the only gold in circulation and most of the residents in rural regions had rarely seen a gold coin. English crowns, shillings and sixpences, and

Spanish milled dollars, picayunes and pistareens were the coins in silver.

But when the value of these came to be computed confusion worse confounded reigned. Values which had been estimated in pounds, shillings and pence began to be reckoned upon the basis of the Spanish milled dollar. But what was that value? A shilling meant sixteen and two-thirds cents in Massachusetts. But in New York and North Carolina it meant twelve and one-half cents. In most of the states seven and one-half shillings made a dollar. In New England six shillings were one dollar; in New York and North Carolina eight shillings; in Georgia five shillings, while in South Carolina it required thirty-two and one-half. Besides all this the current coin had been so clipped, sweated and counterfeited that a man needed to travel with a pair of scales in his pocket and a ready-reckoning table in his memory to receive any approach to a true value when money was paid him.

The result was barter everywhere. The stamp acts, navigation laws and all the other oppressive measures of the British Parliament had resulted in throwing the people upon their own resources. Every farm house was not only a hive of industry in producing products of the soil, but a farmer and his family were manufacturers of everything they needed, or

used. They made their own sugar and molasses, they brewed their own beer, they spun and wove their own clothing and bedding from the wool and flax they raised on their own acres. Every farmer was cooper enough to make his own pails and tubs, blacksmith enough to weld iron and shoe his own horse, carpenter enough to build his own house if needed, and wagon maker enough for his own wagons and sleighs. No butcher brought him meat, for he salted every November the year's supply, and during the year his calves were killed when six weeks old, and the quarters divided among his neighbors from whom he received similar quarters when they had calves of that age. The skins were taken to a farmer who had a tan vat, and there in a liquid strong with oak or hemlock bark, it lay for eighteen months in process of tanning. Then it was dressed and ready for the peripatetic shoemaker, who came to board with the family while he made the family shoes for a year.

The homespun cloth from the family looms was taken to some mill where it could be fullled, and then an itinerating tailoress would come and be the family guest while she cut and made the garments of the household, meanwhile retailing the gossip gathered upon her flittings through the neighborhood. All through the livelong day and far into the evenings the spin-

ning wheels hummed. When they ceased, the fires on the hearth were carefully covered to keep a coal alive for the morning to avoid the necessity for flint and tinder, or, may be, a journey through snowdrifts to borrow a live coal, for fifty years were to pass before a friction match would be invented.

When the farmer was cutting his firewood in the forests, his eye was ever open for a tough and solid tree with a suitably-forked limb, which, pointed with iron, would make a plow, for iron plows were unknown until after the Nineteenth Century had come. His hay was cut with a scythe, whose snath he had bent himself, and the short blade had been made by the neighboring smith. His hay was raked by the hand rakes made at his fireside on winter evenings when he was not employed in fashioning axe-helves after a design which seemed to him perfectly adapted to his natural method of swinging an axe.

His oxen plowed his fields with yokes his hands had made. His team of horses had never known a hame collar, as the harness was of his construction, and the broad breast pieces were of leather from his beeves of previous years, whose hides had been dressed for him. From these his own skill had constructed the broad leather belts which almost covered the animals. Where harness was not thus

made it was of rope from the tow from which flax had been spun. But this constantly broke, and repeated repairs covered the faithful animals with every species of knots.

Labor was scarce. There were many families who owned a slave, but many more did not. And of those who did but few owned two. Even if labor could be hired, there was no money to pay wages. It had to be paid in produce of the farm. So the universal custom of "bees" became established. Farmers had plowing bees, planting bees, logging bees, stumping bees, hoeing bees, mowing bees, reaping bees, husking bees. There were bees to raise new buildings; there were bees to gather loose stone. There were bees to spin and bees to weave. There were apple-cutting bees and quilting bees, and out of all this neighborliness the farmers of this town were found in the year that gave us civil freedom poor in what the world calls wealth, but rich in that affluent living when every interest of a neighbor is an interest of our own.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

EDUCATIONAL CONDITIONS AFTER THE REVOLUTION.

In the last chapter an attempt was made to describe the condition of this town when the seven years of war of the Revolution were closed. It is here proposed to glance at the educational conditions.

In the American histories which undertake to describe the social conditions of this period there is a strange distortion of certain facts. The people are pictured as not only poor financially, but intellectual and educational conditions are put at a very low ebb. McMaster even says that "in New York and Pennsylvania a school house was never seen outside of a village or town." Let us see if this is true of what is now the town of Saugerties.

The county of Ulster has a peculiar position among the original counties of the thirteen states which formed the American Union. It grew not only from one original permanent settlement in early colonial days, but from three. And each of the three was from a

different country in Europe, and each brought its own language. Kingston was a Dutch settlement, New Paltz was a French and West Camp a German. But they had one thing in common. Before anything else might be done a church and a school must be built. Kingston had Andries Van Der Sluys to teach the children of the colony as soon as the colony was started. New Paltz did the same thing, and a former chapter told how the Palatine colony at the Camp, which came on the fourth of October, 1710, and lived in huts of bark and brush that winter built a school house of sawed boards within three months of the day it landed.

The chapters which took our readers on a walk about Saugerties and Katsbaan locating the buildings during the decade 1760-70 called attention to a school house in each place. The writer can establish the fact that the present Union School of Saugerties is the historical successor of the school then standing near the site of the present Russell block, and the school house at Katsbaan that of the school of that early day. The writer has the certificate by which the owners of the school house then on that site in Katsbaan conveyed the school they had so long maintained to the people of the newly constituted district upon the organization of the school system of this

state. This disposes of the assertion of McMaster as at the date of which he wrote (1784), both these schools were at least twenty years old, and probably sixty.

But while it is a fact that our Revolutionary sires had provided schools for the young, but little else was provided. There was a desk all around the room before which was a seat without a back. This seat was usually a heavy slab into which holes had been bored and peg feet inserted. No map nor chart was on the walls, no globe nor model to enable the eye to catch the meaning or shape of the thing described was in the room. Nor was it a part of the task of the teacher to make it plain. The average teacher trained his pupil's memory far more than the reason. His pupils were taught to read with some degree of fluency, to write with ease and in a legible hand, to spell as fairly as could be expected when all authorities did not agree on orthography, to cipher until the pupil could calculate by the rule of three and to learn long rules with multitudinous exceptions upon the use of language. This was all. The pupil had to sit upon the hardest of benches for eight hours a day struggling over Cheever's *Accidence*, or Daboll's *Arithmetic*, wrestling with the polysyllables of Dillworth's *speller*, committing to memory long pages of Web-

ster's American Institute and long sections of the Catechism interspersed with Dr. Watts' "Hymns for Infant Minds." The school books were printed upon a kind of straw paper in letters which were not pleasing to the eye, and were illustrated with the rudest of wood cuts which had done duty for generations of school books and would for generations more until Noah Webster introduced the first of the glorious list of modern school books with his famous spelling book.

The schoolmaster was not specially trained for his labors, nor was his a life profession. He was usually some student for the ministry, law or medicine, who eked out his scanty funds with a few months each year in pedagogy. He would give two months to this every winter, while some maiden who desired to provide somewhat towards a matrimonial outfit would devote two months of one summer, or two, to teaching. The boys went in the winter with a few girls living near by, and the girls went in the summer and with them the little boys. Such were the conditions which obtained all over the land, and yet in these unpromising surroundings the minds of the men and women were trained who developed and moulded this country of ours during the wonderful Nineteenth Century.

The teacher boarded around among his

patrons. He needed a strong constitution as he would sleep one night in the best room, the next one in the garret ; one night in a room in which there was fire, the next in one in which no fire had been lighted in six months ; one night he would have heavy bed blankets, on another he would sleep between a thin feather bed and a thick one, while on a third would have linen sheets on his bed and over all the skin of some wild animal.

He was expected to make himself agreeable during the long winter evenings, to help backward pupils with their sums, to escort the young ladies of the family to singing-schools, apple-cuts, spinning bees, or quiltings, and as he went on Sunday morning with the family with whom he chanced to be sojourning to the chilly church it was his province to carry the footstove with glowing hickory coals to keep warm the feet of the lady of the house who was entertaining him. And on winter nights when the wind was heaping the snow outside of the house where he was staying he would be found employed in turning the swift or reel for the spinning maidens, or holding the yarn as the daughters of the family wound it.

His authority in the school was absolute. His scepter was the rod or ferule, his word in the home was final in matters to be learned from books, his rivalry was dreaded by coun-

try swains and were 'he a gentleman by instinct and in manner his attentions would be most readily accepted by the fairer sex in the neighborhood.

His salary was but a pittance, his duties laborious, but his position carried with it a standing among his fellows unknown in this day of trained teachers, well equipped schools, varied curricula, and text books, which, in clear and intelligent language convey the idea and the thought in the things they teach.

He exacted reverence and respect and such were paid him. But with it was inculcated a respect for law and the rights of others that was most valuable to a people just made free and independent that their liberty should not degenerate into license and selfishness. He taught the rising generation well in things it needed to learn during the infancy of the Republic and many of those lessons might with great advantage be taught to the generation of the opening of the Twentieth Century.

CHAPTER XXIX.

THE COUNTRY DOCTOR.

As we pass in review the conditions of the town at the close of the Revolution, or one hundred and twenty years ago, no one will interest us more than the country doctor. Others may have known much of the town; he knew the town. Others may have been faithful in their day and generation; he was the faithful one. When highways went around hills, and were swamps when rains were falling; and were an object lesson in ruts, stumps and stones in times of drought, he was the one person who knew those terrible roads by day, and pursued their tedious miles at every hour of the night. He knew the town and the people of it for had he not ushered them into it and did he not close their eyes as they made their exit? Had he not physicked them, plastered them and bled them? Was not his name a witness to every will when the drugs he had pounded in his own mortar had not proved as effective as he had hoped in warding off some disease which had baffled his wisdom to diagnose and his skill to cure? And best of all, were there

not at every cross-road and along every country lane, in houses without number, many of those who had been restored to health by his cheering word, his winning smile, his infectious laughter and his simple remedies when calomel and purging had failed, when copious bleeding had been ineffective and when rhubarb and molasses had been prescribed in daily doses all in vain?

What though the old white horse which he bestrid carried the only drug store in a score of miles? What though universal medicines had not been invented, nor favorite remedies compounded? What though almanacs with testimonials from those who had risen from the grave because a bottle of some useful panacea had been placed in the coffin were not yet printed? In spite of the primitive conditions prevailing sick and suffering humanity all over the town blessed the day in which that old white horse stood tied at the door while the old doctor with beaming face was within with warm greeting and warmer clasp of hand and warmest word direct from a heart that was pumping its own red blood until the afflicted one felt his very presence a reviving hope. That restless sufferer might be tossed with fever; he might be denied water especially if it were cool; to him ice might be forbidden when his veins were afire and instead small

quantities of clam juice be administered; he might be cupped and leeches bled; he might find his gums shriveled from his teeth by the mercurial compounds he swallowed, yet the faithful physician in his constant attendance and unremitting care oft-times had brought him through it all in safety.

These were days when there was no royal road into the medical profession. There were but two medical schools in the country and these but poorly equipped. Many a medical student was admitted to practice who had never dissected a human body. So difficult was it to obtain anatomical subjects that it is said that the Harvard medical school had made a single body do duty for a whole year's course of lectures. And the writer remembers the gruesome tales of the efforts made in their student days by the practitioners of fifty years ago to obtain cadavers for the purpose. How many a grave was violated in those days the world will never know; how rarely did the body of a dying criminal escape the knife medical students would never reveal.

But meager as was the education obtained in those days in medical schools most of those who entered the profession were denied even this. Almost all who sought to enter upon the practice of medicine could do no more than study with an old practitioner. Such a

student went into the office, the pestle rarely left his hands as he had to grind the powders in the mortar day by day. It was his to hold the basin while the patient's blood was filling it; to mix and roll the pills the doctor had compounded; scrape the lint, tear the bandages and sew wounds while his master directed.

What if but few of the drugs of to-day were known? He learned to know the medical qualities of all the plants and herbs of the neighborhood. What if the books he studied abounded in errors and false speculations? Granted that he had a keen eye and logical mind, a memory that was tenacious and an apprehension that was quick he soon reached the limit of the book knowledge of his master and began to draw on the stores of his experience, and before long was equipped with what was needed to carry a benediction to those who were suffering.

He could know that in the community none was more welcome than he. None more respected. None occupied a higher station. None more readily rose to prominence and wealth. And yet none other felt the impotence of man as he. Fevers raged and decimated whole communities, for it had not yet been learned what sanitation will do to banish them. Quinine had not yet been discovered, though cinchona bark was pounded in small

quantities. Small-pox carried off its victims by the hundred and disfigured many more, for vaccination was not made known until 1798, and inoculation was still declared to be against the law of God. Surgical operations were still performed regardless of the pain and misery occasioned the victims, for anæsthetics were unknown until 1846, and the wonderful triumphs of the surgery of the present day would have been regarded as but little short of the miraculous; while the long and increasing list of remedies found in this year of grace in the *materia medica* would have been entirely unintelligible to him, and a glimpse at the special and mechanical instruments and devices of modern surgery would have been the greatest of revelations.

Few volumes were found in the doctor's library, and aside from saws, lancets and turn-keys, few surgical instruments used in his practice. No medical societies called for the reading of his experience and discoveries, and no medical journals were published to tell of his successful cures or operations. His renown was local, and he survived for a generation or two in the memory and love of those whom he had cured, or at least helped, and when he died he went to his long rest worthy of such a tribute as Ian MacLaren paid Dr. William MacClure in the "Bonnie Briar Bush."

It remains to speak of the earliest physicians of this town. The old stone house now standing on the north side of Main street in this village was the home upon the farm of Hiskia DuBois. This farm was upon both sides of the present Main street. In 1773 it was sold by David DuBois to Dr. Christopher Kiersted, whose mother was Leah DuBois of New Paltz. Dr. Kiersted was born in the city of New York in August 1736. There he was educated, and, as stated, came to Saugerties in 1773. This house he made his residence and office. He was then the only physician in town. He died March 23, 1791, but before his death two young men from Katsbaan had studied medicine with him. They were Dr. Coonradt Newkirk, who was born in 1766, and Dr. Abram Fiero, born in 1770. When they began to practice they both located in Katsbaan, Dr. Fiero upon the place now owned by William Clement and Dr. Newkirk upon that now in possession of William Fiero. These were the town physicians for many years, Dr. Fiero dying in 1828 and Dr. Newkirk as late as 1850.

On Tuesday, July 1, 1806, thirteen physicians of Ulster county met in Kingston and organized the Ulster County Medical Society. Two of these were Drs. Newkirk and Fiero and thus became charter members. Their



RESIDENCE OF DR. KIERSTED.

first act was to consider and ascertain the cause of an epidemic of fever in Kingston at the request of the authorities of that village and it was found in a mill pond of stagnant water, and the first paper discussed was "Fever."

In the early days of the last century Dr. Christopher C. Kiersted, son of the old doctor, began to practice in this village. The writer does not know the year he was admitted, but he became a member of the Ulster County Medical Society in 1819. With the development of the great manufacturing interests and the consequent growth many other physicians settled here of whom it is not within our province to tell. This book deals only with the origins of things in the town.

CHAPTER XXX.

THE OLD FARM HOUSES.

The chapters just concluded have made the attempt to transport us back to 1783 and to the conditions under which the people of this town, having just emerged from a seven years war, were living. It is here proposed to look at their dwellings and farm buildings.

Of the old stone farm houses of one hundred and twenty-five years ago and over, very many remain in different parts of the town. Year by year some are torn down, but every community has several. Some are unoccupied, some used for other purposes, but most have been greatly transformed and fitted to modern conditions of heating and furnishing. Yet some can be found with the old-time characteristics.

This dwelling was usually of stone and most frequently limestone, then as now, abundant. Those earliest built were low and rambling. The front roof descended from the ridge-pole very steeply to the eaves, while the back roof came to within eight feet of the ground. There was usually no break in the roof, but dormer

windows were frequent in that front. The house was of one story and above this was a garret covering the whole lower floor. This garret rested upon heavy beams for it was chiefly used for the storage of grain and usually contained the indispensable loom. The house was entered in front across a "stoep" on either side of which were long seats which in summer fulfilled the purpose of a family sitting room and place for neighborly chat and gossip over a friendly pipe. In the rear of the house, especially if that rear was towards the east, was built as a lean-to a large room for summer purposes. This was of frame and along its outside was a long horizontal shutter which could be let down and supported in the manner of a bracket, and which thus became a shelf on which to expose to the actinic rays of the morning sun the newly washed milk pans. In this summer room was found during that season the family table which was a round one, and when not in use the top was turned up on a roller hinge revealing a lid under which were kept the knives, forks and pewter spoons in daily use. Around the room were chairs of maple with flag or splint bottoms.

The table furniture was largely of pewter aside from steel knives and forks. Pewter spoons, cups, tea-pots, dishes, bowls, molasses-pots and measures abounded. Large pewter

platters were on every table. Even pie dishes were made of the metal. Silver ware, especially spoons, every family had, but not in every day use.

From the front door a wide hall extended across the house to a rear door and in this hall summer evenings ever were the sweetest. On one side of this hall was the large family sitting room with its immense fireplace and its well-scrubbed floor, the home of the spinning wheel and its accompanying reel and swift. On the other side of the hall was the parlor, or best room containing, oft-times, high-backed chairs of mahogany with claw feet.

Entering the house from either front or rear one came through a door divided into an upper and a lower half, the lower of which was usually shut. Upon it hung a heavy brass knocker for announcing a caller. The house was guarded by shutters which were kept open by a large iron letter S. Many shutters had a crescent-shaped slot towards the top to give enough light for one to pass in the room without running against furniture when they were closed.

The floors of the house were laid with wide white or yellow pine planks and these were often hewed and the under side of those on the lower floor was a slab. A chair rail ran around the plastered wall of the living room,

and the big fireside with its immense brass and-irons was the family centre all the winter months.

The cellars were large, cool and airy. They were flagged with stone and for more than half the year they held the family provisions. Here were firkins of butter, barrels of pork, corned beef and salted shad and herring, with a large tub containing soured pig's feet, headcheese and roletjes. Along another side was a hogs-head of vinegar and just beyond were barrels of cider and probably, one of wine. Here too were stored the apples, potatoes, cabbage and vegetables for the winter.

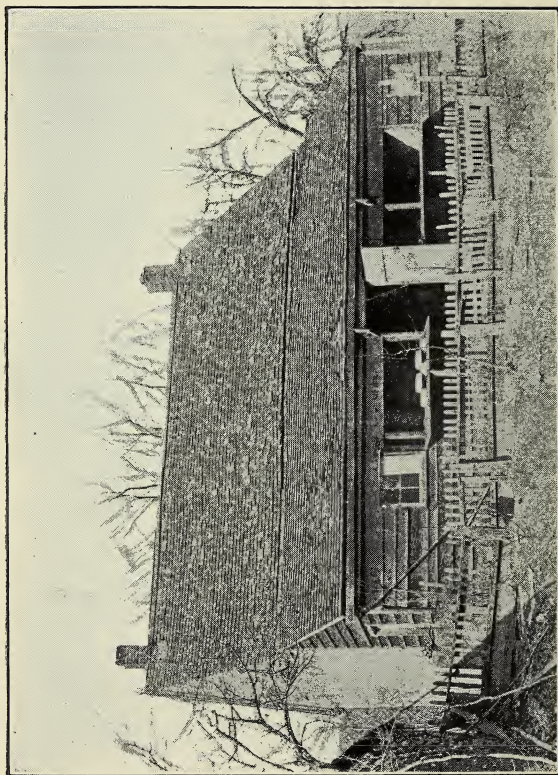
In the bedrooms were high-post bedsteads and around the walls were large blue chests of pine, oak, or it may be cedar containing rolls of the family linen, or manufactured articles from the same, with blankets of wool, quilts and coverlets. And when a bride was to be fitted out her trousseau could be furnished from these blue chests.

On the high bedstead was a downy feather bed over a straw mattress, or tick, resting upon tight cords crossed in the frame of the bedstead. The bed was draped with white dimity curtains, or perhaps a kind of chintz, with vines and birds and flowers. The bedstead was high enough to receive under it during the day the trundle bed in which the children slept at

night and a valance hid it from sight when thus disposed of.

In the living room, or in the wide hall ticked the six-foot clock with a face recording the changes of the moon as well as the hours, minutes and seconds of the day. Near it stood a writing desk, or secretary, with drawers to the floor. This was either cherry, or mahogany ornamented with brass mountings and containing pigeon-holes and other receptacles for the stationery, papers and documents of the family. The upper part was frequently the bookcase for the family library. Also either in the hall or in the living room was the closet with glass doors behind which was the china of the family awaiting a wedding or a New Year's dinner to displace the pewter of daily use.

Behind the house was the great kitchen. Here was the domain of the negro women of the household if such there were. Here stood the dresser on which was displayed the pewter of the family shining as brightly as frequent polishing could make it. Beside the mammoth fireplace was the brick oven with its long spadle for placing or taking out the platters of bread or biscuit, or the pewter pie dishes. Within the chimney jams hung the crane ready for instant use, and beside it stood a tin Dutch oven ready for service in front of the glowing fire, while against the jam was the spit for the



A TYPICAL DUTCH FARM HOUSE.

roast. Long iron toasting forks, long-handled frying pans and griddles, revolving gridirons and ladles were in their accustomed places and beside the dresser stood a wooden mortar with a long cylindrical stone for a pestle to grind the spices for the family.

Most of the remaining houses have been altered so often that their early features have gone. The lean-to described has disappeared from almost every one in town. The house of Luther Myer, in Hommelville, still has one in all its pristine glory. Many still have their heavy beams and low ceilings. But even here the ruthless hand of the renovator has often robbed it of beauty by cutting part away, or covering them with ceiling boards or plaster. Most of the divided doors have gone, the high post bedstead has disappeared with pewter dishes and spinning wheels, and the large open fireplaces vanished with the groups that made merry around the pine-knot fires.

Shortly after the new century began with 1801, a new style of stone houses began to be erected. When a more modern limestone dwelling was built at that time upon the farm so long in the possession of the late Ephraim I. Myer, of Katsbaan, it was the talk of the town. The ceilings were made high and plastered, and a circle of plaster ornamented the ceiling above the centre of the room. Then

the stone parsonage at Katsbaan was built a two-story house and set another fashion.

The village of Saugerties has types of both these styles of Dutch stone dwelling architecture. The Mynderse house, the Peter P. Schoonmaker, and the Kiersted representing the older, while that of Sherwood D. Myer represents the newer.

The barns were immense affairs. As abundant room was necessary to swing the flail barn floors were built of great size. Of necessity crops were stored overhead and oak beams of strength and size must be used to support them. In these latter days these barns have been torn down. Threshing by machinery requires little barn room, bays hold the crops which in storage are thus but little removed from the ground, and labor-saving machinery gathers and stores them. Nevertheless the changed conditions are not greater than can be witnessed to-day. Could a modern farmer of this town be transported to a Dakota prairie and see machines doing every species of farm labor he would not be more interested than an Eighteenth Century farmer of Saugerties returning to see the present-day methods on his own acres.

Readers of this chapter will find much in it which seems of a later day than the close of Revolution. But the change from the con-

ditions of that day was slow and gradual. Those whose memory recalls the middle of the last century saw much of what existed one hundred years ago. But since the civil war of 1861-65 almost all the life of the former days has been swept away. And the coming generation will find it difficult to understand the manners and customs that continued in this town until shaken to their destruction by the earthquake of the terrible civil war.

CHAPTER XXXI.

FARM LIFE IN OLDEN TIME.

When we were glancing at the settlement of this town in one of the earlier chapters, we noticed how little land was under cultivation before the year 1700. Attention was called to the great "bouwerie" of maize the Indians were cultivating just north of the village of Saugerties in 1663, and had been during unknown years, and the beginning of farm life as the first permanent settler, Cornelius Lambertsen Brink, took possession of his grant in 1688 on the Plattekill and Esopus at the south end of the town, with Peter Winne adjoining him in 1692. No one besides these resided in the town when the year 1701 ushered in the Eighteenth Century.

For twelve years there was no further conveyance of land in the town of Saugerties. The four Meals and Hayes grants of 1685-87 had been passing through different hands without anything being done towards settlement upon them. On the 16th of August, 1712, the large patent covering so much of the village of Saugerties was deeded to John Persen, who

settled upon it. One month later (September 13, 1712) the British government abandoned the tar-making project at West Camp, and allowed the Palantine colonists to seek homes for themselves, which most of them who were on the west side of the Hudson did within our town. The twenty-five years following (1715-40) witnessed the clearing of the forests and the breaking of the soil to the plow, especially at Katsbaan and about the present village of Saugerties. And almost every one of the early deeds in this town on record covering the more desirable farming land is dated during these twenty-five years. So that at the time under consideration, or the year 1783, the farms of the town had not been tilled for much more than fifty years. We propose to look in this chapter at this comparatively virgin soil and its harvests.

We find the farmers raising the standard crops year by year. On every farm the great crop was hay for the subsistence of the domestic animals of the farm. There was no local market for it, as every one but Domine De Ronde, who lived where is now the residence of Mrs. Dawes in the village of Saugerties, was engaged in farming. Captain Benjamin Snyder carried some to New York, as he had resumed his trips with his sloop from the creek since the Treaty of Peace was signed. But baling hay

was not yet thought of, and the sloop could not carry much loose.

Old meadows, as now, were turned over by the plow, and potatoes or corn planted on the upturned sod. Potatoes was the profitable crop in the virgin soil. And on almost every farm were potash kettles producing pot and pearl ash from the exhaustless forests, and the residuum kept the fertile soil yielding such crops of potatoes as the town has never produced since. The same may be said of the cereals, corn, rye and wheat, and during the short days of winter the country resounded with the ring of the flails as the golden sheaves of wheat and rye were parting with their treasures.

On every farm was a tobacco patch. Everybody smoked or chewed, and the use of snuff was almost universal. It was known that better tobacco came from Virginia, but there was no money for Virginia tobacco, and the home product must suffice, though snuff was brought up the river and could be obtained at Persen's store in Katsbaan. In those days, as now, the great tobacco firm was that of the Lorillards, and jars of Lorillard's snuff stood on the shelf of every merchant. On every farm were flocks of sheep. The winter clothing of all was woolen. This was from the backs of the sheep of the farm. Sheep shearing every spring

provided the raw material, which was then taken to the wool carder and returned in rolls for the large spinning wheel to be spun for the loom, and the whir of these made music in every house as the spinner, holding the roll in her left hand and whirling the wheel with her right, stepped back five or six feet on the floor and then wound the spun thread upon the spindle as she returned. Twenty years before this Hargreaves had invented the spinning-jenny, which could spin a dozen threads or more at once, and a few of these had already come in use in the town. This yarn was then dyed and woven into cloth or blankets and the cloth again taken to the mill to be fulled, after which a traveling tailoress cut and made the family clothing.

Every farmer had his field of flax as well. This was carefully tilled and when ready to gather was pulled and laid in rows to rot the outer stalk. Then it went to the "crackle," by which those stalks were broken. This was a frame of long wooden knives upon which was a lid of similar knives hinged to the frame at one end. The upper knives were raised and, descending, each just avoided the corresponding lower knife while breaking the outer stalks of the bunch of flax placed between the knives. The bunch of flax went next to the "switchel," or "swingle." This was an erect

board, not quite perpendicular, about three feet high and the upper end was sharpened. The bunch of flax from the crackle was laid over this and beaten with a long wooden knife to separate the fibrous parts from the stalky and entirely break up the coarser fibers. It was then ready for the "hetchel." This was a board with a square of iron teeth in alternating rows. Through this the bunch was repeatedly drawn and the fine fibers of flax were combed from the coarser tow. This fine product was then ready for the distaff of the small flax wheel, so well known everywhere, on which it was spun. Its future course to the loom and the bleaching-green need not be told. The years we are describing found chests and presses filled with countless yards of linen, and garments of the same, in the dwellings of the town. Some of these were especially fine in texture and witnessed to the labor and skill of the fair hands that had spun and woven them. One of the pleasantest recollections of the boyhood days of the writer is a scene in which a half a dozen or more men were cradling grain together, each man one step behind the one leading him, and each clad in a suit of homemade white linen. The graceful swing of the cradle, as each kept stroke along a hillside was a pastoral picture which will never be seen again. The tow, the

coarser flax from the hetchel, was spun into rope or mops, or woven into doormats.

The orchards were laden with apples. There were not as many varieties as to-day, many of those we use having been developed by the systematic and scientific culture of the apple. But a few of the excellent old varieties as the Straat and Esopus Spitzenbergh are either lost, or deteriorated. The delicious pears of to-day were almost unknown as they were originated during the Nineteenth Century. This is true of most of the orchard fruits as peaches, plums, nectarines and apricots.

Many of the vegetables which now enrich our tables were unknown. There were no cauliflowers, no egg-plants, no tomatoes, no nasturtiums. The seeds of the tomato were brought in after years from France to be cultivated as an ornamental shrub for its golden love-apples. The fruit was at first thought to be poisonous. Turnips, beets, cabbage and onions were grown, but not spinach and asparagus though the latter began to be gathered where it was found to be growing wild.

On the hills and in the woods huckleberries, strawberries, raspberries and blackberries grew in abundance. But nothing had been done to produce the exquisitely flavored berries found in the gardens of to-day. Nor were the beautiful flower gardens of to day possible.

The beautiful geraniums, fuchsias, and chrysanthemums which bloom with us were unknown. So were many others of those which every woman cares for now and loves. Tulips were there and roses. But the exquisite productions of the propagating skill of the florist which we enjoy had not been conceived of. And yet the gardens of those days with their bachelor's buttons, sweet peas, sweet williams, holly hocks, marigolds, pinks and violets will be ever fragrant in the memory of those who gathered them in childhood.

No one gathered ice in those days. Every thunder storm curdled the milk. The butter was hung after every meal in a pail in the coolest corner of the well and bushes were left to grow to shade the cellar windows to preserve the delicious coolness to be found in every farmer's cellar.

Oranges were sometimes seen, cocoanuts often and lemons were frequently found in groceries, but pine-apples and bananas were unknown. A fruit store, such as every country village now knows, had never been seen in the largest cities, and a representative of sunny Italy could hardly be found in America at that day. It was known that Columbus was an Italian, and Amerigo Vespucci, but it had not been conceived that any other would ever come, and modern Italian exhibitions of

fruit could not have been displayed at their completest county fair.

On every farm porkers were fattening for the November "butchering." And in the stall a beef was being fed for this event. In May the farmers flocked to the Hudson river for shad and herring, and a barrel of each was salted for the family larder. Game was still to be had in reasonable plenty and streams were stocked with fish. Every farmer had a flock of poultry, including ducks, geese and turkeys while the last in their wild state were frequently found by the sportsman. Every spring the sky was darkened by the interminable clouds of wild pigeons flying north, of which hundreds found their way into the farmer's kitchen. So the life of those days was still one of comfort and plenty though many things we find to be necessities had never been conceived of. Above all there was a whole-soulness in the life they lived which the strenuousness of modern existence has almost destroyed from the earth.

CHAPTER XXXII.

THE INDISPENSABLE LOOM.

Much more remains to be told of the life and work on the farm in the early days of 1783. The present generation will be interested in the appearance of our grandsires and dames. They were largely, or almost entirely, clad in garments homespun and made. We attempted to tell of the cultivation, preparation and use of the flax and linen. More should be said of homemade woollens.

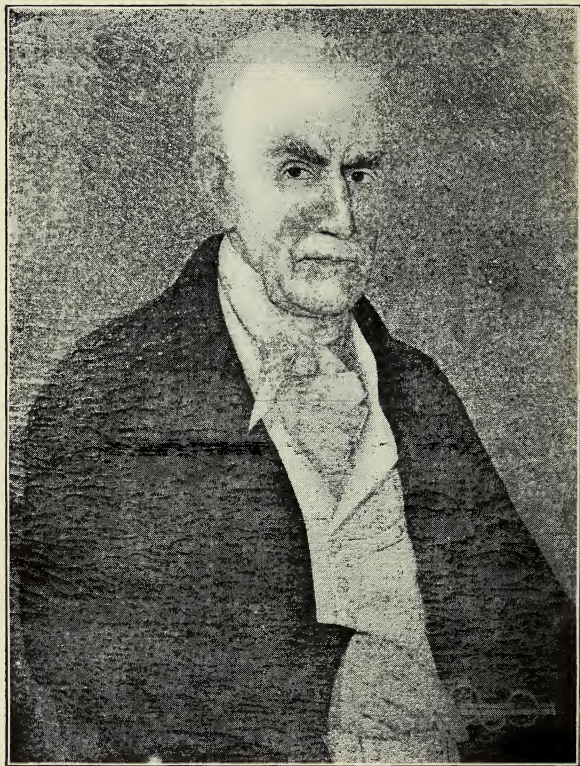
A description of the large spinning wheels for wool, and for tow as well, was given in the last chapter. We propose to take the reader to a Saugerties farm in the spring. There comes a balmy day in that season and the flock of sheep is driven to some stream where a waterfall is tumbling. The flock is there impounded. One by one they are taken to the fall and the water pours into the heavy fleece which has coated them through the wintry days now gone. Holding the sheep in his arms the farmer rubs the drenched fleece until the water from it runs clearly. Then another takes its place. After a few days drying it is

ready for the shearer who quickly robs it of its winter coat. This was taken to the fulling mill where it was carded to remove burs and other foreign substances, and to transform it into rolls for spinning. From the spindle the yarn was run off upon a reel which had a clock ratchet to give notice when a hundred yards of yarn had been wound. This was called a skein, and two or more of them twisted together a "hank." Sometimes it was necessary to twist the threads of yarn. Two skeins were then hung around a "swift." This was a cage of wooden rods which hung upon an upright staff upon which it revolved. The only bearing was at the top of the staff which was sharpened and inserted in the cross-pieces supporting the rods. From the revolving swift the yarn unwound as it was twisted upon the spindle of the large spinning wheel. As the bearing of the swift had never been known to be oiled the friction soon produced a wierd, uncanny sound which, once heard, could never be forgotten. Thirty knots of warp and stocking yarn, and forty of woof, or filling were considered a day's work.

After reeling the yarn was scoured and went to the loom. The warp was "spooled" and thence run off on the warping bars. Then each thread by itself was drawn through one of two "harnesses" and wound on the warping beam

after each passed through a reed. The filling was run on a quill, which was usually a cone of small paper, home-made. A quill wheel was used to fill both spools and quills. The quills were then inserted in a shuttle which was thrown by hand through the alternating threads of warp. Then by treadles worked by the foot one harness was pulled down as the other raised, the reed, hung in a heavy frame, was beaten with one hand and the shuttle with the woof was thrown back by the hand which had caught it to the hand which threw it while the other harness was brought down and the shuttle returned.

From the loom the web went to the dye. The colors were usually snuff-brown or butternut and either often mixed with white. After dyeing the cloth was fulled, teasled, sheared and pressed and was then ready for the tailor-ess, as before described. But no process could keep this homemade cloth from catching lint and dust, and from fulling when it became wet, and the clothes often shrank in the wearing. It possessed one great virtue, it would wear, and through seasons not a few. To prevent the shrinking the wool was frequently mixed with cotton and a cloth called satinet was made which was almost universally worn, or the wool was mixed with linen and called linsey-woolsey.



CORNELIUS PERSEN.

Dresses and petticoats were also made from homemade flannel, and whatever the æsthetic eye might say about them they had the merit of warmth, and with the homemade woolen stockings, cuffs, mittens and comfortables the women, boys and girls of the families were ready for the blasts of winter.

For all ordinary wear, and even for service on Sunday, our ancestors, both in youth and in older years were thus clad in homespun woolen, and in summer in linen of their own production. But all occasions were not ordinary, especially for the young of both sexes, and few were so poor as to be unable to secure a suit, at least, of what was worn in the outer world. This had been hard to obtain. It was difficult to secure the money to buy with and more difficult to buy. During all the years from 1776 to 1783 the British had been in possession of New York city and thus merchants up the Hudson had been shut out from the city. Cornelius Persen, who kept the town store at Katsbaan, had been compelled to transport his merchandise all the way from Philadelphia by the inland route of the Rondout valley to Port Jervis and the Delaware valley to Philadelphia. And during the long months of the British occupation of that city he had made the long journey with teams to Boston. As most of what the people used

was raised on their own farms a merchant did not keep the assortment of to-day. Still spices were needed, and tea. Salt was a necessity. Farmers produced their own flour, sugar, molasses and tobacco. But they purchased their snuff, exchanged farm products for their tea and spices, and in their barter provided for finer garments from the merchant's shelves. What had he to offer? His dry goods were called broadcloths, tammies, half-thicks, persians and pelongs, blue sagatha and red bunts, ticklenburghs and black everlasting, and handkerchiefs bearing the unintelligible names of bandanoe, lungee, romals, culgee, puttial and silk setetersoy. If Persen's shelves could not supply the would-be purchaser who desired any of the above dry goods a journey of twelve to fifteen miles over a rough road would provide for his or her selection the assortment to be found in Groote 'Sopus, as the Dutch always called Kingston.

The wagon of that day had no springs, and jolted fearfully over the roots and stumps and through the ruts of country roads. One day Cornelius Persen brought home a vehicle which was the wonder of the country-side. It had only two wheels. The body was hung upon two heavy straps of leather stretched from a cross-bar in the shafts under the box

and around big iron bows behind the seat and thence down to the axle. There was not much spring to the leather straps, but when the wheels struck an obstacle there was a lateral motion which prevented a jolt at the risk of being thrown from the gig. This vehicle could be used only to ride to church and on other occasions of state. But it was the predecessor of modern conveyances, and the days of the lumber wagon as a family carriage waned.

Most of the labor was done by oxen. Oxen plowed the fields, for they were cheaper and more steady and patient to break up the newly-cleared ground so full of stumps, roots and stones. Oxen drew the logs and firewood, oxen were yoked to most of the wagons upon the highways. The crops were drawn from the fields upon ox-carts and hay was loaded so far over the beasts that they were hidden and the load seemed almost to move itself. These patient beasts of burden were emblematic of the slow, the sure and the safe life of those days when the foundations of the prosperity of this mighty land were being laid. We may smile at their slowness. But our fathers built sure, and they built well. The foundations thus laid have never needed repairs and all the stress of modern life would have shaken any other to its overthrow.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

SOCIAL LIFE IN OLDEN TIME.

The culmination of the year among our ancestors one hundred years ago was the holiday season. With the labors of the field completed and, for the time, the flail in the barn suspended and the wheel and the loom in the house set aside, the families who had toiled so hard gave themselves over to a season of enjoyment. In those days this season began with the day of Santa Claus, or St. Nicholas, December 6th. That worthy saint, or his embodiment, went about distributing presents to good children, and at that time all were good, by filling their stockings hung in chimney corners. All had made great preparation for his reception. The children had been singing all day :

“ Santa Claus, goedt heilig man,
Loop uw weg van Amsterdam,
Van Amsterdam na Spanje,
Van Spanje na Oranje,
En breng deze kindjes eenige graps.

Sint Nicholas, mijn goeden vriend,
Ik had u altijd wel gediend.
Als gij mij nu wat wilt geven,
Zal ik u dienen mijn leven.”

This petition might be roughly rendered into English after this fashion to us degenerate Dutch Americans :

Santa Claus, good holy man,
Go your way from Amsterdam,
From Amsterdam to Spain,
From Spain to Orange,
And bring these little children toys.

Saint Nicholas, my dear good friend,
To serve you ever was my end.
If you me now something will give,
Serve you I will as long as I live.

But a generation or so before the time of which we are writing this day had been less and less frequently observed and all its essential features transferred to Kerstijdt, or Christmas, which followed in nineteen days thereafter. Services were held in the church, with the communion of the Lord's Supper, while at home great preparations were in progress for the family dinner of the year.

Nieuw Jaar, or New Year's Day, was always kept. There was not as much calling to bring the greetings of the New Year as in villages and cities, but houses were ever open on that day and the fullest hospitality shown. And every New Year's day services were held in the church in Katsbaan and the sermon reviewed the year. With the coming of the

Rev. Dr. Ostrander, in 1812, he introduced the feature of an interpretation of the immediate future in the light of the recent past, which was exceedingly profitable, as he used the Scriptures to show how all was bearing on the extension of the kingdom of Christ on earth. Paas, or Easter, was duly observed and Pinxster, or Whitsuntide, was a holiday. This was the special day of the colored people.

Shortly after New Year's day had come and gone a succession of visits was begun and continued. Leaving part of the family at home to care for the stock on the farm and keep the house the team was hitched to the sleigh and driven to some distant relatives for a stay of a day or two. From there to another, and sometimes a dozen or more such visits would be paid to relatives and friends living within a radius of twenty or thirty miles. Upon their coming home the visiting family would begin to receive return visits and this interchange would be kept up until the returning sun would begin to send the sap of spring into the sugar maples, and the season for providing the sugar and molasses for the year's supply was at hand, and it was time to tap the maples.

It was a busy scene around the sap-bushes. The upturned troughs of previous years would be cleaned, the elder or sumac spiles prepared and the trees tapped. It was a work

that required attention to gather the sap into the sugar house and boil it. In those early years brass and iron kettles hung over the fire and slowly evaporated the water, but in time the well-known large, shallow pans displaced the former and rapidly reduced the sap to the desired sweets. No one who has ever been so fortunate as to enjoy the delicious sugaring-off can ever forget the occasion when a mass thrown into the newly fallen snow to cool delighted the palate.

But no sooner was the close of the winter celebrated by these preparations for the saccharine neccessities of the family than busy housewives found other needs equally pressing. Into an immense tub set upon a large flat stone, and upon a layer of straw, a great quantity of ashes was put for leaching. The lye thus obtained was boiled into soap with the accumulated grease. In the cellar of the house usually stood a trough excavated from the trunk of a huge tree and divided into two compartments. Into one of these compartments this soap, which had been made soft, was poured and kept for a year to thoroughly cure before using. The succeeding spring the other compartment was filled and from the first the year-old soap was used.

Meanwhile during the short days of winter, the threshing had been done and the beaten

grain been winnowed by being thrown by broad winnowing baskets against the wind blowing across the barn floor, as fanning mills were yet unknown. It was a long and laborious process. And during all this time the axe had been plied in the forests, and the year's supply of wood for the fires, and of rails for the Virginia fences, which zigzagged around all the fields, had been chopped, brought home, split and piled. The farmer had erected his ropewalk, and the tow from the flax the women had spun had been made into rope. His flint-lock musket had been cleaned for the northward flight of the wild pigeons that would darken the sky for days, and pigeons in every variety of preparation would find their way from his kitchen to his table.

With the young men and boys he had set his traps in the forests about, and many a skin of mink, otter or muskrat, or it may be of larger game, had been obtained. The gun had secured for him the pelts of a number of foxes, and these were prepared for the annual visit of John Jacob Astor to Persen's store in Katsbaan. Here they brought welcome dollars to the hunter and the trapper, for Astor came with the earliest sloop up the Hudson in the spring, and trappers and hunters from the Catskills and beyond the mountains resorted to this store to meet him. At times the old store-

house was filled with them, and Astor carried the overflow into the kitchen against the indignant protests of the mistress of the house.

The social life of the young people had been maintained through the winter. Many had been the spinning-bees, and these had been followed by a frolic. Quilting bees had been numerous, and to these the young men came in the evening. Regularly during the winter a singing school was held every week. Here some vocal instructor gathered the young in school house or church, and catching the pitch of the key from his pitch-pipe instructed and led them in sacred song. Often some one who was an expert with the flute or violin would give instruction thereon as well, and train a choir of voices not only, but develop an orchestra in the use of violin, violoncello and flute. About the year 1830 a teacher by the name of Dunton was such an one, who visited Katsbaan and trained a choir remarkable for their cultivated voices and skill with the above instruments.

Debating societies were features of the winter. The questions were argued with every recurring year. The disputants were ranged upon the affirmative and negative sides, and the decision as to which brought forward the better arguments and reasoned most cogently was left to three judges. Our Dutch ancestors

in this locality became noted reasoners, and held their opinions with tenacity, but there were those who prided themselves upon their logic. It was related of some that when they found their opponents abandoning the field, they would go over to those adversaries' side and argue their view of the case to a triumphant conclusion. In these forums the question of liberty had been argued time and again preceding, during and after the Revolution; and preceding the civil war of 1861-5 these debating societies were once more arenas for the discussion of the mighty questions finally decided in that momentous conflict.

The Fourth of July was the great holiday of the year. Around it centered all that was patriotic. Its spirit was an exhilaration of the energy of a young nation conscious of possessing boundless resources not only, but of being free. The day was ever celebrated by young and old. The Declaration of Independence was read by him who possessed the most sonorous voice, and the orator of the day was ever expatiating on the deeds of Washington and the army, and ever viewing the universal spread of liberty and American institutions. And in view of what has been achieved in the Nineteenth Century the boast of those orators has been entirely justified.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

INTERESTING DOCUMENTS OF THE REVOLUTION.

The story of our town was brought down to the close of the Revolution, but before we leave this period the writer desires to call attention to two or three interesting documents and have them become part of that story. We will consider them in their chronological order. The first is a request made by Captain Jeremiah Snyder of Governor Clinton for ammunition. To explain the situation it should be said that the battle of Oriskany, in the Mohawk valley in 1777 and the terrible slaughter of the Indians there aroused in them a burning desire for revenge. From this time the settlements on the frontier suffered from the torch and tomahawk, or were in constant alarm. Early in 1778 Governor George Clinton placed the defense of the north-west frontier of Ulster county in the hands of Colonel Johannis Snyder. He had charge of this until the close of the war. One of the principal approaches by which the savage foes came to the settlements was through the Esopus

valley. Colonel Snyder stationed a force at Little Shandaken which was continued there with short intervals until 1781. Captain Jeremiah Snyder, of this town, was in command in the autumn of 1778 and his letter needs no explanation.

CAPTAIN SNYDER ASKS FOR AMMUNITION.

Little Schondeacon, Octbr, 15, 1778.

Sir, I think proper to let you know that upon my taking the Command at this place I found that the Company was in a bad posture of Defence in Regard to Ammunition. I, therefore, would be glad you would endeavor to send a fresh Supply as soon as possible, that we may be able to make some Resistance in case the enemy should make an excursion upon this Settlement, but we have at Present no Intelligence of their being near this Place.

This Company now Consists of Forty-one Private, besides Serjeants & Corporals, and these I can not Suply with three Cartirages a peice; from this you may Judge what Defence we can make. My Request is, therefore, you will Send a Supply as soon Possible and you'll oblige, Sir,

Your Most Hble Serv't

Jeremiah Snyder, Capt.

To Gov. GEORGE CLINTON.

The second document is a year and a half later. To the First Ulster Regiment, commanded by Colonel Johannis Snyder, had been attached a troop of horse commanded by Captain Sylvester Salisbury. For some reason this troop had been detached from this regi-

ment and assigned to some other. Neither the circumstances nor the other regiment is now known. The petitioners, who were Saugerties men, protested and joined in the following

PETITION TO GOVERNOR GEORGE CLINTON.

Kingston, April 24th, 1779.

The Petition of the Troopers in the north Part of Ulster County to his Excellency Governor Clinton humbly sheweth :

As a mutual attachment and good Understanding between Officers and their men are an Essential Part of the many Requisites which are necessary to ensure victory to our arms and Freedom to our Country, And, Whereas, Capt. Sylvester Salisbury, (between whom and your petitioners there subsisted the Greatest Harmony and Confidence), has resigned his Commission, and that solely, because he was to be under the Command of a man whom he deems unworthy of the Rank he holds :

We, the Subscribers, Beseech your Excellency, either to annex the Troop to some other Regiment, or put them under the Command of some superior Officer, and re-appoint Captain Sylvester Salisbury to the Command of the Troop. Should this be the case, your Petitioners beg leave to assure your Excellency, that their Services shall be, as they have heretofore been, Free, Chearful, & Ready. And your Petitioners &c. shall ever Pray &c.

Adam Woolfven, Abraham Keater, Roeloff Eltenge, Christian Dull, Moses Pattison, Tjerck Low, Petrus Winne, Junier, Henry P. Freligh, John Dewitt, Jr., John A. D. Witt, John E. Schoonmaker, Peter C. Brinck, Edward Osterhoud, Hen-

dryck Turck, John Turck, John Freligh, Benjamin Velten, John J. Chripel, Benjamin Winne, John DeWitt, Jun., John Brink, Jun., Baltus Kiffer, Peter VanLeuven, Christian Fero, Marten Hommel, jr., Hermanus Hommel, Abraham Hoffman.

The third of these documents exhibits a serious state of affairs. We have just noticed the conditions that required the presence of troops to guard against invasion by the way of the Esopus valley in 1778. Before that year had passed Wyoming and Cherry Valley had been blotted out by the tomahawk, the torch and scalping-knife. And every settler in an exposed place trembled for his home and loved ones. It was known that the savage foe was preparing for further devastation. In view of pending danger the following petition was started in Katsbaan and circulated through the town :

SAUGERTIES MEN ASK FOR A GUARD.

To His Excellency George Clinton, Esq., Governor and Commander in Chief of all the Militia of the State of New York and Admiral of the Navy of the same.

The Petition, of the principal well affected Inhabitants of the most northerly part of Ulster County, Humbly Sheweth :

That, whereas, after Sincerely consider'd our present Situation, we find that we live in a very Dangerous part of this State ; many Disaffected Persons among us, and a Savage Enemy dayly on our weakly Guarded frontiers ; and whereas, four young men of

our Neighborhood, who have lately Engaged in the Eight months service, are gone off, and Joyned without Doubt the Enemy, they will Discover unto them, our present weak Situation, for the Small Guard at Woodstock is in no State to our Safety, for this minute we are alarmed, and Called out to the Blue mountains, for the Enemies are making their approach on our Quarter, as we Suppose, will take their Revenge on us, because a few Disaffected Persons have been sent under Guard to Kingston out of our Neighborhood. In any General Alarm, when the militia is Called forth in Defense of this State, the well affected men turn out, and the Disaffected Persons remain at home ; as witnesseth the late alarm in every such Case. Our Families and Effects are greatly Exposed, for some of our militia Men are gone to Nepenak (Napanoch), some at Woodstock, and if more men Should be Continually Called, our Farming Business must be neglected, to the great Loss of this State, and we fear much, if we be not Timely assisted, Shall be obliged to flight, and leave our all to a Savage Enemie.

Therefore, We, the Subscribers, most humbly approach your Excellency with this our humble Petition, imploring your Protection in Sending a Reinforcement of Fifty or Sixty men out of Dutchess County, and to Station them at the Blue Mountains, at and near Tobias Wynkoop's, for Such a Guard will be most handy, when Station'd as above said, either to reinforce the present Guard at Woodstock, or assist us in time of need.

Sir, we do not presume, to prescribe unto your Excellency how to protect this State, but knowing your Excellency's Mind can not at once be everywhere, makes us approach you with these presents, not doubting your aid.

Sir, That Divine Providence may bless and pro-

long your Days and give Success to your Endeavours to Suppress our Savage Enemy, we Shall Ever pray.

John Christian Fiero, Christian Will, Christian Fiero, Jeremiah Snyder, Yurry William Reghtmyer, Petrus Emrich, Jurry Hommel, Benjamin Snyder, Johannes Folck, John L. DeWitt, Capt., Johannes Rechtmeyer, Peter Osterhoudt, Lu., Ludwigh Roes-sell, Ephraim Myer, Christian Fiero, Jr., Cornelius DeWitt, Petrus Backer, Abraham Low, Jr., Stephen Fiero, John Langandyck, Christiaen Snyder, Peter T. Myer, Petrus Myer, Jacobus Whitaker, Jr., Johannes Persen, Peter Myer, Jr., Cornelius Persen, Jacop Frans, Matthew Dederick, John Cox, Jr., Peter Eygener, Corn's Langendyck, William Emerich, Tunis Myer, Salomon Schut, Philip Feltan, Jacobus Dederick, Tunis Osterhoupt, Jury William Dederick, James Winne, William Falk, Willi'm DeWitt, Peter Eygener.

May ye 15th, 1779.

The Governor granted their request. A former chapter told of the scouting during 1779 by Capt. Jeremiah Snyder and Anthony Van-Schaick along the foot of the Catskills, and of the service of the detachment under Lieut. Peter Post in the same year. It also told of the terrible punishment visited on the savages by Sullivan's expedition, which destroyed their crops and villages. Although the next year (1780) Capt. Snyder and his son were seized and carried into captivity in Canada, there was no other molestation of the people of this town. Nevertheless, the regiment of Col. Snyder patrolled this frontier until 1781.

CHAPTER XXXV.

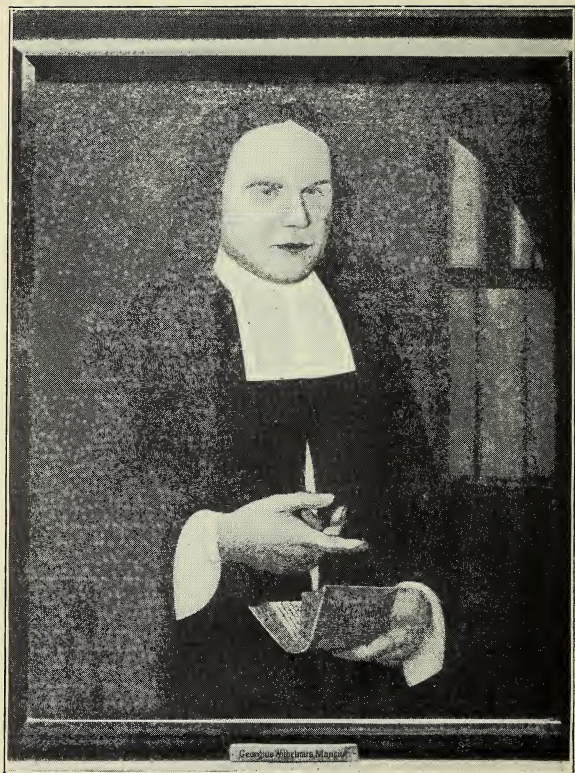
THE KATSBAAN CHURCH.

This old church is frequently called in early documents "de steene kerk op de Kats Baan," the stone church on the Kats Baan. What was the Kats Baan? To this there have been two answers. In the first entry made in the church records by Domine Mancius (who was a German) the name is spelled Kaatsbaan. Kaatsbaan is the Dutch word for tennis court, and many have held its derivation to have been that the church, which is upon a hill, stands upon the south end of a barren rock, almost level, which extends northwards for one-fourth of a mile. An active imagination may fancy this rock to resemble a tennis court on which Titans might play. There was a spot two hundred years ago between Kingston and The Strand (Rondout) which was called in deeds of that day by the same name, "Kaatsbaan."

The other derivation finds the root of the name with Katskill and Katerskill in the panther, or wild cat, with which this densely wooded region was infested. As Katskill is

the kill or creek of the wild cat, Katerskill the creek of the male of the species, so the Dutch words Kats and baan, a haunt, resort, course or range mean the haunt or resort of the animal. Around this baan, or haunt, the most majestic of white oaks flourished in which these terrible creatures had their home.

When the Palatine colony came to the Camp in 1710 they immediately built a church at West Camp. This was a church for the colony in which the services were conducted by both the pastors, Kocherthal, the Lutheran, and Hager, the Reformed. The people lived in peace and amity during the next ten years, and worshipped there. But a cause of dissension had arisen. On Dec. 20, 1709, a month before the Palatines sailed from England, Hager had taken orders in the Church of England, being ordained by the Bishop of London, and upon his arrival at the Camp had endeavored to introduce the ritual of the Anglican Church in the worship of the colony. Kocherthal protested. But he died in 1719 and Hager in 1721. The colonists had but occasional religious services for a year or two from Rev. Daniel F. Falckner and Rev. William C. Berckenmeyer, both Lutherans, when another Reformed clergyman appeared, Rev. John Jacob Ehle, or Oehl, a German, who also had taken orders before leaving London. He



REV. GEORGE WILHELMUS MANCIUS

attempted to continue the efforts of Hager and remained among the people until about 1727. But the Germans did not take kindly to these attempts at conformity, and would have none of the ritual or liturgy. To what extent this caused them to be found worshipping "on the Kats Baan" in 1730 it is impossible to say. But Nov. 8, 1730, the records at Katsbaan begin in the handwriting of Rev. George Wilhelmus Mancius, who signs himself in Dutch "their at that time pastor."

Who was Mancius? He was born in Nassau, Germany, 1706; was educated in Leyden University, Holland, and Herborn Theological Seminary in Germany, and sailed from Amsterdam to this country July 12, 1730, coming immediately to the Camp. The question why he came here to this town has never been answered. But reasons may be found. The Palatines upon the east side of the Hudson greatly desired a church of the Reformed faith, but could not obtain a minister. The Classis of Amsterdam, in Holland, would not permit an ordination in America, and candidates for the ministry were compelled to take the long voyage across the sea. John Van Driessen was ready to become the pastor at East Camp (Germantown), but unwilling to go to Holland for ordination. So he presented himself to a Congregational Association in Connecticut and

laid before them documents which had been forged, upon which they ordained him to the ministry, and he assumed charge of the Palatine church of East Camp. When the Classis of Amsterdam heard of it they protested, but could do nothing. (See Chapter IX.) The writer is disposed to find a reason for the coming here of Mancius by the way of Holland in this matter in connection with the efforts of Hager and Ehle to Anglicize the Palatine church, taking account of the further fact that Mancius, a German, would naturally come to the place where the first German colony in New York had settled.

When Mancius appeared at West Camp he found most of the colony removed a mile or two west to the lands of the Kingston Commons, as stated in Chapter VII. There is no record or evidence of his organizing the church at Katsbaan. He speaks of "de germeente," or the congregation worshipping on the Katsbaan and says the churchbook is begun Nov. 8, 1730, by himself, "their at that time pastor." Where they worshipped, or in what building is not known, as the stone church was not erected until 1732. He became their pastor and continued so until his death in 1762, with the exception of eight months during 1731-2 when he was the pastor in Schraalenberg, New Jersey. He was called to Kingston in May, 1732,

to become associate pastor in the Reformed church with Rev. Petrus Vas and continued in charge of Katsbaan with his Kingston church until his death.

The lease for the land upon which the stone church was built and a description of the church have been given in Chapter XI. As stated in Chapter VII the Lutheran church at West Camp seems to have been virtually abandoned from this time until 1765, after the death of Mancius, and the church of Katsbaan was the only place of worship between Kingston and Katskill (Leeds). The death of Mancius in 1762 created a vacancy in the pastorate which was not filled until 1780. During this interval it was supplied by Domines Doll, of Kingston, Schuneman, of Katskill, and Westerlo, of Albany, who regularly administered the sacraments. Occasional services from other ministers appear from the church records.

Rev. Lambertus DeRonde became the fourth pastor of the flock, of which we have reckoned Hager, Ehle and Mancius his predecessors. His pastorate began in 1780 and continued until 1786. How he was driven by the British from the Collegiate Church in New York city for his patriotism is told in Chapter XXVII. But this persecution gave to Katsbaan a faithful pastor. For seven years after 1786 the church stood without a pastor and was, as be-

fore ministered to by Domines Schuneman and Doll until the coming of Rev. Petrus Van Vlierden in 1793 to be the fifth pastor. He came by way of the island of St. Croix in the West Indies, now just transferred from the sovereignty of Denmark to the United States. He had taken high honors at Leyden University, and remained in the pastorate at Katsbaan for eleven years, or until 1804. The church was once more without a pastor until 1808, when for two years Rev. James D. Demarest served. Again pastorless until 1812, Rev. Dr. Henry Ostrander was called and settled in May of that year, and continued for fifty years. This long pastorate brings down the story far beyond the limits of this work.

A legend has been handed down by tradition through successive generations in the Katsbaan Church to this effect: After the Palatines came to the Camp, and the Lutherans and Reformed separated the question arose whether Katsbaan should be a German Reformed or Dutch Reformed church. A meeting was called of which the presiding officer was Hans Martin Snyder. The argument that there would be no other German Reformed church with which to affiliate, while all future growth would be from the incoming Dutch from Kingston prevailed, and the vote was a tie. Snyder gave the casting vote as president and as he was not fluent

in Dutch he decided in favor of a "Neger Deutsche kerk" (Negro Dutch church), and not Neder Deutsche (Low Dutch), as he intended.

But there are difficulties in the way of this tradition. The name of Hans Martin Snyder does not appear among the Katsbaan church people until about 1770; there is no evidence that it was ever organized as a Dutch Reformed church at all; and while Mancius was here both Lutherans and Reformed worshipped in the stone church as in the church of the colony until 1762. The church never came under the supervision of the Dutch Reformed church until after 1773, as it was reported to Synod that year that it still "stood out;" and was first reported under the jurisdiction of Synod in 1784. If the traditionary incident ever occurred it must have been about 1780, and there was a Hans Martin Snyder at Katsbaan at that time. The meeting may have then and thus decided through its president in this ludicrous manner that Katsbaan become a Dutch Reformed church.

A generation or two ago there was a story current at Katsbaan which showed the wit of Domine De Ronde. He did not reside in Katsbaan, but in what is now the village of Saugerties upon the present Dawes property. There was a time during his pastorate when

his salary was greatly in arrears. One Sunday after preaching a most excellent discourse, as he came down from the pulpit, and took the hand of each one of the consistory in turn, one of the elders remarked in Dutch, "Well, domine, you have given us employment for a whole afternoon; there is enough in the sermon we have just heard for a week's digestion." He replied, "Very well, then it will be on Sundays with you as upon every other day of the week; you are filled to the full, and I, I have nothing from you but *mauger zaagertjes* (lean Saugerties)."

The old church of 1732 remained unchanged until 1815, except some minor improvements and a new floor in 1813. In 1815 the roof was taken off, the walls were raised, galleries were built on the east, west and south sides of the church, the pulpit was placed at the north side of the church, with a canopy above it, straight back pews were put in place of the former benches, the porch upon the east side was removed, two doors were inserted in the south wall and a steeple was erected in which a bell was hung. When all was done the seats were distributed by lot. But even with these improvements the church could not hold the worshippers. When days were pleasant and weather favorable, the church was full to overflowing and on summer days outside every

open window were groups of listeners to the preaching of the Word of God. For from the Emboght and from Kiskatom, from Malden and from Saugerties, from Blue Mountain and from Plattekill, the people gathered. Thus the building remained until 1867 when it was rebuilt as it is to-day. In 1841 the canopy and pedestal had been taken away and the steeple altered.

The church was not incorporated until March 28, 1796, when its title became "The Minister, Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Kaatsbaan in the town of Kingston, in Ulster Country." When the town of Saugerties was organized in 1811 this title became a misnomer, and as the town grew and the consistory had charge of the religious interests of the whole town including Saugerties village, Blue Mountain, Malden and Plattekill it was re-incorporated July 11, 1826, under the title "The Minister, Elders and Deacons of the Reformed Dutch Church of the town of Saugerties." It has been said it was made "The Church of Saugerties," but actually, it had the comprehensive title just stated. When the division was made in 1839, and Katsbaan became a new organization it was incorporated as "The Reformed Protestant Dutch Church of Cattsbane." But this title was not historically correct, and the con-

sistory constantly erred in official papers. At last this was corrected by a re-incorporation April 4, 1892, as "The Reformed Church of Katsbaan."

In 1816 the residents of the present village of Saugerties petitioned for a house of worship in that village. The Katsbaan church responded favorably, provided that the necessary funds were raised. Nothing resulted therefrom, and in 1821 another petition was presented with a like reception and with the same result. In 1826 a third petition was successful and the brick church was built, which was afterwards the Saugerties Academy and is now the George Burhans building on Livingston street. In 1831 the village of Saugerties was incorporated as the village of Ulster and the inhabitants, which were largely of other extraction than Dutch, made a determined and continuous effort to get rid of the name of Saugerties for that locality. The bank when incorporated was "The Bank of Ulster," the papers "The Ulster Palladium" (1828); "The Ulster Star" (1833) and "The Ulster Telegraph" (1846); the iron mill was "The Ulster Iron Works," and the lead mill "The Ulster White Lead Co.," and in every way possible the attempt was to rid the community of the Dutch name which seemed to mean nothing, and was thought to be of uncertain origin. This effort

was finally abandoned in 1855 and the village was re-incorporated as the village of Saugerties. The conservative families of the town and village had continued to call the latter by the old name during all the prolonged attempt to foist the new one.

On October 1st, 1833, the classis of Ulster was petitioned by residents of the village of Ulster to divide the congregation, and on Jan. 11, 1834, the application was made to the consistory for a separate organization in the village to be known as the Reformed Church of Ulster. This petition was denied. Few signers were of the Dutch membership, or element because of the fear that in a new church elements not Dutch would preponderate, and that at an early date an effort might be made, and be successful, to take the church into some other denomination. In denying the application the consistory remarked "Some are not members and others not of our denomination." It expressed a willingness to divide as soon as each could support a church. In 1835 another petition was presented, with one in opposition. In June of that year consistory met with a committee of the classis of Ulster to see if a division could be made, and a day was appointed when the male members of the congregation should meet at the church in Katsbaan to vote on the proposition. Such a vote

was taken and the division was disapproved of. In 1838 another petition of the inhabitants of the village of Ulster was denied.

By this time it became evident that something must be done in the matter. As these petitions came almost wholly from the elements in the church in the village of Ulster which were not Dutch the consistory felt more and more indisposed to grant their request. The result was that Katsbaan was influenced by the consistory and their pastor to be constituted a new congregation. This would leave the Dutch element in Ulster as a balance of power in the church where they would not petition to be. But it would make the Ulster church the old organization, the church of the *town* of Saugerties legally, which it was not in history, nor in fact. It cost the people of the Katsbaan church many a feeling of sadness thus to give up the historic church of their fathers to those whom they felt to be in many things not in harmony with their origin. Very few of the families of the village of Ulster in 1839 were of Palatine descent, the element there which was called Dutch being mostly of Holland lineage, while at Katsbaan nine-tenths of the Dutch families were of Palatine ancestry. These felt that they surrendered something when they consented that the Palatine church, as an organization go to strangers.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

THE BEAVER CREEK.

The development of the manufacturing industries of this town is but a story of the last seventy-five years. But it will be of interest to speak of the history of such industries which preceded 1825. The name of the town came from the "little sawyer" who had a mill at the mouth of the Sawyer's creek before 1670 and two grist mills, respectively, upon the upper and lower falls of the Esopus, or particularly at Stony Point and about the site of the Martin Cantine Co., were built before 1725. The mill of the Posts, now owned by Martin Terwilliger, is older than the Revolutionary war, but older than any was the grist mill on the southern border on the Plattekill at the bridge into the present town of Ulster. Still this mill was not, nor has it ever been, within the borders of this town.

When the Palatines landed at West Camp in 1710 there was no grist mill in the town. The colony was fed by Robert Livingston, of the Manor, under contract with Gov. Hunter, from Livingston's mill on Roeloff Jansen's kill.

Complaints were made as to the quality of the flour furnished, and a white-washing investigation was made. But there is no disputing the facts that complaint was made by the colonists. Tradition in the family of the descendants of Christian Myer has always kept alive the following story: The wife of Christian Myer was Anna Gertrude Theunis, of a well born Palatine family reduced to destitution in the terrible wars in the Palatinate. When they came to the Camp she submitted to the trials and deprivations of the terrible first winter without complaint until at last, under the miserable quality of the flour furnished, her spirit broke down completely. Her husband had obtained some wheat somewhere, but there was no mill nearer than Twaalfskill, now Wilbur, in the city of Kingston. Obtaining his consent, which, not thinking her in earnest, he gave one morning as he went to his task of preparing pines for the production of naval stores to release their obligations to the government, she took a schepel of wheat (three-fourths of a bushel) in a bag and carried it on her shoulders through the woods all the long way from West Camp, by way of the Old Kings road to Wilbur, where it was ground, and back again the same day, arriving home after her thirty-four mile tramp exhausted, but conscious that she had flour fit for the table.

It is worthy of remark that the industries of the town aside from grist and saw mills began along the Beaver creek. No other stream in the town pursues so many miles of course within its borders. It rises in a swamp on the farm of Larry Van Wart near the Blue Mountain church. Flowing south it reaches the valley of Unionville and makes use of this to reach the lowlands. Swinging a great circle it bisects the farm of Mrs. Germond and then upon a course due north it winds through a valley for about five miles until it flows into the Cauterskill at the Greene county line.

To-day its windings can be traced by the many walnut trees upon its banks. Some twenty years ago a local poet wrote of it:

“ Soft-flowing Beaver, by thy winding side
I wander with the hours of passing day.
Through thy pellucid depths and shallows glide
The phantom forms of finny tribes at play.
Umbrageous are thy banks; in close embrace
The walnuts o’er thy bosom interlace;
And in their mottled shade, by yonder spring,
The circling swallow dips his restless wing.”

When the first mention is made of the region in the earliest land grants in 1685, it was already called the Beaver creek. Hunters and trappers had obtained their peltries for many years along its banks and from its beaver dams. As we pass in review the incipient industries of the town we will follow the stream

towards its mouth. The first claiming our attention, if not the earliest erected, was the mill at Unionville which was built by Adam Montross in the earliest years of the last century for a grist mill. This subsequently passed into the possession of a man named Backus and then into the Van Hoesen family. From a grist mill it was made a plaster mill and finally dismantled has disappeared. Even the high dam is broken and the stream is unconfined.

On the northern portion of the Wynkoop tract was the next industry. Here where now is the bridge leading over the Beaver to the house of Russell Wynkoop, was a hat factory. There are those still living who remember the stone benches within it where beaver skins were dressed. Judge Henry Wynkoop, who lived there seventy-five years ago, was called "The Hatter." The stone foundations of this factory are now the abutments of the bridge above named. Just north of the old hat factory is a strong sulphur spring and there is another a mile north on the farm of Addison Sax.

A few hundred yards north of this spring of Sax, a brick yard was in operation early in the past century. The brick in the erection of the store of Daniel Lamb in this village were from this brickyard. A little farther north, on the north side of the Malden Turnpike, was the

tannery of Cornelius Fiero. This remained there until within the past fifty years, and the vats were where is the present bed of the stream for, by a freshet after the tannery was demolished the raging waters cut through a new course which the line of vats made one of least resistance.

Another grist mill was built in olden times on a branch of the Beaver where is now the residence of C. P. Finger and a saw mill on the same branch at the residence on the farm of William H. Hommel and in days long since another brickyard was in operation upon the farm of Abram E. Hommel.

All of these have disappeared. Not a wheel is turned upon the Beaver to-day. No brick is made and so far as this stream is concerned tanning is a lost art. The little stream in its winding course of almost ten miles flows unobstructedly and fed by never failing springs, waters the valley even in its driest seasons recalling Tennyson's "Brook":

"For men may come and men may go,
But I go on forever."

CHAPTER XXXVII.

THE DAYS OF SLOOPS.

When the Treaty of Peace between Great Britain and this country was at last in effect in 1783 the interest and concern of the people of this town turned in the direction of the peaceful pursuits of life. So far almost the sole occupation had been agriculture. The grinding of grain and the sawing of lumber were about the only work of mills. As the British had swept the river of what sloops there had been in 1777, river commerce had almost disappeared. A former chapter told of the purchase of the sloop of Capt. Benjamin Snyder during 1776 for a fire ship, and a subsequent one of the burning of two sloops in the Esopus at this village by Vaughan's marauding expedition.

Soon after the keel of another was laid by Capt. Snyder, and for some years it ran regularly to New York on monthly trips. Some time about the middle of the decade (1790-1800) Capt. Andrew Brink built a large sloop, which he named for a favorite sister, "The Maria." His father had instituted many years

before the scow ferry which crossed the river from his door at the mouth of the Sawyer's creek to Chancellor Livingston's, just opposite, and the son was born with a love of the water. The *Maria* was thought by the people of those days a craft of wondrous size, and its owner immediately secured from the Chancellor the transportation of the products of his manor, and from other up-river towns a most profitable trade.

The captain of a Hudson river sloop before the advent of steam occupied a unique position. He was the link socially between the river towns and city life. He was the business agent not only of the merchant, but of the farmer. He selected the merchant's stock; he sold the farmer's products; he was the expressman; he carried the news; he matched the goods in the city from samples which the housewives of the river towns gave him; bore the messages of friendship and business with which he was entrusted at each end of his route; he was the welcome guest in the city families on which he called, to whom he told of their country friends, and through him the news of sorrow and bereavement of his patrons, or the tidings of their prosperity, were conveyed, for he often carried the written missives as postman, but more frequently he was intrusted with the verbal message

which bore the tidings of a sad death or burial; or was the happy messenger to announce a marital engagement of youthful lovers; or he bore the gossip of the river village as he was asked to carry to city friends and relatives what had passed since the last voyage.

When the boat arrived at the pier in the city and her lines were thrown the captain went ashore to deliver his messages from house to house and do his errands from store to store. With him went the ladies who had been confided to his care during the voyage and whom he delivered to their friends. When his errands were all done he set about drumming up a return cargo. The purchases for merchants and farmers made he would peradventure find the sloop not yet half laden. He must use his influence to secure some business ventures on the part of mercantile friends. Meanwhile days slipped by. The date of the return of the vessel was problematic. But when at last a satisfactory cargo was obtained, or in default when the captain decided that a cargo of grain and timber, or hay, or skins, or other products of the soil or chase could be more readily obtained up the river than one of goods in the city the captain gave the announcement that on a certain day the sloop would sail. It

quickly circulated from mouth to mouth and when the appointed day and hour arrived there was a gathering on the pier that rivaled a modern farewell at the departure of a European steamer, and amid the fluttering of handkerchiefs and good-bye cheers the vessel dropped out from her pier into the stream.

It was an Elysian delight to lie on deck on a summer day under the shadow of a sail and watch the transformation of the Highlands, or the lights and shadows of Catskill mountain scenes. But all days were not summer days, nor all days Elysian. There were voyages in storms of snow, or when ice was forming. There were days in late autumn when the hay from farms was loosely piled in a mighty stack on the deck of the craft. And then no fire must be built on the vessel, despite the discomfort. For no ardent mariner dared risk the danger, as baling hay was unknown and the idea of stoves was yet unborn.

Once started on the voyage, the uncertainty of its duration was the most prominent feature. A sloop setting sail on an afternoon might have reached her destination at Sauger-ties when her passengers awoke the next morning. And again, it might be becalmed before Spuyten Duyvil was reached, and be a week on the trip up the Hudson. And light winds often blew so gently that the travelers

would go ashore in a small boat and buy butter, eggs or milk and regain the vessel a mile or two from where they left it.

As stated above the sloop *Maria* carried much of the produce of Livingston Manor. And during the ten years Captain Brink sailed her, Livingston was a frequent passenger. He had been experimenting with steam before he went as Minister to France in 1801, and while there had been interested in the steamboat that Robert Fulton had put on the Seine in 1804, and which had broken down. The men became very intimate and Fulton married a niece of the Chancellor. So he came to be a frequent and welcome guest at Clermont, the home of Livingston.

In the cabin of the *Maria* the Chancellor and Fulton often discussed the problem of steam navigation as a quicker means of communication, and a more reliable power than wind, and around the captain's table talked over their plans, the obstacles encountered and the causes of their failures. They were now in the presence of a practical navigator, who had been on the water from boyhood and was in command of the fleetest of river craft built under his own supervision. Fulton was a man of great scientific knowledge for one of those days, and had many a mechanical invention to his credit; and Livingston to a pro-

found knowledge of law and statecraft added a rare skill in mechanics, and besides was the possessor of one of the largest of American fortunes. On a voyage up the river the three decided to attempt once more to solve the problem and use every means to succeed. They went to work. Chancellor Livingston furnished the capital. Robert Fulton obtained from Scotland a Watt engine of twenty horse power, with a copper boiler, which he adapted to his plans, while Captain Brink set about embodying his ideas as to what the craft should be from his experience as a navigator of the Hudson. The latter part of the year 1806, and until midsummer of 1807 were spent upon the boat and the engine, to the ridicule of many of the acquaintances of the captain in his own town. Even his own wife laughed at him to which he replied that he he would soon go to Albany in command of the steam craft and stop opposite his father's place on the river and take her along. All she could say was "when I see you and Mr. Fulton driving a boat with a tea kettle I will believe it." We will see how the captain's wife took her ride.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

THE TRIP OF THE CLERMONT.

The morning of August 3, 1807, was bright and warm. At a pier in the harbor of New York a vessel was lying which the events of that day were to make historic and the trip she was just to undertake would never be forgotten. A motive power would be utilized that day which would change the face of all the earth and would plow every sea. The power of millions of millions of horses would not be able to accomplish during the century then just begun what would be wrought by the force confined in what was derisively called "a tea kettle." Fulton's copper boiler, bubbling and hissing at that North River pier that morning, seemed to be throbbing with a consciousness of its power and what it was to do when it would come to its birth. And all the material forces of modern civilization awaited a touch of a hand on a lever there that day to spring full-grown into being.

The craft that was lying at the pier that morning in the early days of the Nineteenth Century would have excited the contempt of

those who saw that century's close. A long narrow vessel with two masts on each of which was to be spread a sail; a low cabin on each side of the deck; somewhat forward of the center of the vessel a revolving wheel on either side with ten paddles like the arms of a wind-mill, and these unenclosed in a wheel house; and on the pier a jeering crowd of spectators exchanging cheap witticisms with each other at the expense of Fulton and his associates on board, silent, but confident.

When the appointed hour had arrived the vessel was cast loose, and the scoffing crowd became quiet, for they saw her paddles revolve and the boat worked its way out into the stream. Soon after reaching the middle of the river there was a break in the machinery which occasioned alarm, and which took some time to repair. This was duly accomplished and the vessel slowly proceeded up the Hudson, and the crowd was quiet as the visionaries with their jeered-at boat propelled by a tea kettle passed out of sight.

The trip excited great interest along the river and some alarm, especially at night, as it was thought to be a vessel on fire. Dry pine wood was used in the furnace and its light illuminated the sky for miles. The boat left the pier in New York at one o'clock in the afternoon of Monday, August 3rd, and reached

Clermont (opposite Saugerties), the seat of Chancellor Livingston, at one o'clock, on Tuesday. The one hundred and ten miles had been covered in just twenty-four hours. Here the boat was anchored in mid-stream and Fulton went ashore to spend the night with Livingston, while Captain Brink, at his father's on the opposite bank, at the mouth of the Saw creek, came to redeem his promise and take his wife to Albany in the boat driven by a tea kettle.

Anchor was raised on Wednesday morning at nine o'clock and Albany reached that afternoon at four so that the actual traveling time had been thirty-one hours. The next morning at nine the return began and Saugerties was not made until six in the evening—nine hours. Here they anchored for the night and left for New York at seven on Friday morning, which was reached at four that afternoon, or in nine hours, the whole return trip in eighteen hours of actual traveling. Both on the trip to Albany and upon the return the wind had been dead ahead and no benefit could be derived from the sails.

It is a fact but little known that Fulton had named the craft "Experiment" and it was not until her return to New York and her paddle-wheels had been enclosed and cabins and other accommodations provided for carrying

passengers that the name "Clermont" was substituted. By the latter name she has always been known.

It is a striking comment on the lack of news enterprise in those days that the Albany journals contained no notice of this trial trip. The vessel arrived in Albany on her second trip on Saturday, September 5th, 1807. The Albany Gazette of that date notes in an obscure corner of an extra, without flourishes; "The steamboat which left New York on Friday morning arrived at Albany on Saturday, having twenty-four passengers on board." It left on Monday morning following with forty ladies and gentlemen as passengers. On October 1st following the New York Evening Post announced that the steamboat arrived from Albany with sixty passengers in twenty-eight hours. She left New York next day at ten o'clock against tide and a strong head wind, ran foul of a sloop eighteen miles up which tore away one of her paddle wheels, and after various detentions arrived in Albany on the evening of October 4th, at ten o'clock, with ninety passengers, having forced her way up against a constant wind with one paddle wheel.

She was now put on the regular course to Albany for freight and passengers. The writer has in his possession the following letter of

instructions written to his grandfather by Robert Fulton :

NEW YORK, Oct. 9, 1807.

CAPT. BRINK : —

Sir—Inclosed is the number of voyages which is intended the Boat should run this season. You may have them published in the Albany papers.

As she is strongly man'd and every one except Jackson under your command, you must insist on each one doing his duty or turn him on shore and put another in his place. Everything must be kept in order, everything in its place, and all parts of the Boat scoured and clean. It is not sufficient to tell men to do a thing, but stand over them and make them do it. One pair of quick and good eyes is worth six pair of hands in a commander. If the Boat is dirty and out of order the fault shall be yours. Let no man be Idle when there is the least thing to do, and make them move quick.

Run no risques of any kind when you meet or overtake vessels beating or crossing your way. Always run under their stern if there be the least doubt that you cannot clear their head by 50 yards or more. Give in the accounts of Receipts and expenses every week to the Chancellor. Your most Obedient

ROBT. FULTON.

The boat was advertised to sail from "Pauler's Hook ferry (now Cortland Street Ferry), provisions, good berths and accommodations provided." For the first time in history travel on the Hudson river could arrange its journeyings with regard to time. It was the begin-

ning of the day of time tables for journeys by water. The schedule of rates was as follows:

					<i>Time.</i>
New York to	Newburgh	\$3	00		14h
" " "	Poughkeepsie . . .	4	00		17h
" " "	Esopus (Kingston) .	5	00		20h
" " "	Hudson	5	50		30h
" " "	Albany	7	00		36h

It was proposed to accomplish three entire trips from Albany to New York and back in two weeks. On November 6th the boat carried over one hundred passengers.

The Hudson Bee in June, 1808, contains this interesting description of the boat: "The steamboat is certainly a curiosity to strangers. To see this large and apparently un wielded machine without oars or sails, propelled through the element by invisible agency at a rate of four miles an hour, would be a novelty in any quarter of the globe, as we understand there is none in Europe that has succeeded in the plan upon which this is constructed. The length of the boat is 160 feet, and her width in proportion so as not to impede her sailing. The machine which moves her wheels is called, we believe, a twenty-horse-power machine, or equal to the power of so many horses, and is kept in motion by steam from a copper boiler, 8 or 10 feet in length. The wheels are on each side, similar to those of water mills, and are under

cover; they are moved backwards or forwards, separately or together, at pleasure. Her principal advantage is in calms, or against head winds. When the wind is fair, light square sails, etc., are employed to increase her speed. Her accommodations, 52 berths, (besides sofas, etc.,) are said to be equal, or superior to any vessel that floats on the river, and are necessarily extensive as all the space unoccupied by the machinery is fitted in the most convenient manner. Her route between New York and Albany is a distance of 160 miles, which she performs regularly twice a week, sometimes in the short period of 32 hours, exclusive of detention by taking in and landing passengers. On her passage last week she left New York with 100 passengers, upwards, and Albany with 80 or 90. Indeed this aquatic stage, the Experiment, from Albany, together with the public sloop, the Experiment, of this city, bid fair to attach the greatest part of the travelers which pass the Hudson, and afford them accommodations not exceeded in any other part of the world." Thus the connection of this town with the introduction of steam navigation was vital and close.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

THE FORMATION OF THE TOWN.

As the history of the town has been brought down to the opening years of the Nineteenth Century a glance at the development of the village of Saugerties may be of interest.

In chapter X. it was shown that in 1763 but twelve, or strictly speaking, eleven houses were to be found on the north side of the Esopus within the corporate bounds of the village of Saugerties. To obtain this number the house of John Brink, Jr., at the mouth of Sawyer's creek, of Myndert Mynderse on the river and others had to be counted. So that in the closely built part of the village there were but six houses, namely: Those of Hiskia DuBois, John Post, Abraham Post, Jacobus Post, Isaac Post and Petrus Myer. Those occupied nearly the location of where are now the old Kiersted house, the Reformed Church parsonage, James Russell's store, the Dawes residence, a site under the hill west of the north end of Elm street, and the Sherwood D. Myer residence. The house of Johannes Myer on the site of the present house of J. M. Genthner might be added.

The close of the Revolution in 1783 saw little change in the village. About 1792 Robert R. Livingston became a purchaser of lands hereabout, and in after years the Livingston family owned considerable property here. When Henry Barclay began the manufacturing interests in Saugerties in 1825 the Livingstons invested largely in real estate in this village.

The present town of Saugerties had always been the northerly part of Kingston Commons, and thus part of the town of Kingston. But the lands belonging to the Kingston trustees had been sold off, or divided, about the year 1804 and there was little need for the corporation to continue. Besides dissensions arose among the trustees and complaints against them became frequent. They finally and permanently dissolved December 13, 1816, after a corporate existence of one hundred and thirty years. The funds remaining in their hands were divided and assigned to the overseers of the poor of the towns of Saugerties, Esopus and Kingston, in which three towns the lands of the corporation lay.

Previous chapters have spoken of the disputed questions of the boundaries of the town. The northern portion about Asbury was long a scene of strife between the town officials of Catskill and Kingston because the boundary

line was indefinite. About 1746 this was determined. Then arose the question of the triangle bounded by the Hudson river, the Saw creek and the present Greene county line. This was what is now West Camp, Malden and the adjacent territory. The inhabitants had to attend to all their civil duties as far from home as Albany and a forty mile drive over the miserable roads of those days and as many back occasioned much complaining. Finally the present boundary of Ulster county on the north from the Hudson westward was fixed in 1767 and the triangle was annexed to this town. With the opening century it became a burden to transact all town affairs as far from home as Kingston and a separate town existence was mooted. Almost a dozen years passed before this was effected. The town of Saugerties was incorporated April 5, 1811, and on April 16 the first town meeting was held at the house of Christian Fiero (now Kaufman's) in Katsbaan at which John Kiersted was chosen supervisor; Capt. Andrew Brink town clerk; Benjamin Snyder and Hezekiah Wynkoop overseers of the poor; Cornelius Wynkoop, John T. Schoonmaker and Samuel Post assessors; Peter P. Post, Jonah Valck and Abraham Wolven commissioners of highways; and Elisha Snyder collector. By successive elections Capt. Andrew Brink was continued town clerk for

the next ten years and had his office at the store of his father-in-law, Cornelius Persen, in Katsbaan, as Capt. Brink had retired from the command of the steamboat Clermont, had declined the offer of Livingston and Fulton to move to Albany and act as the Albany agent of their steamboat line, and had taken charge of Persen's store.

The town was laid out in twenty-nine road districts upon organization, and the present bounds of such districts largely follow the old establishment both in the number of the district, its limit and the feature natural or artificial which bounds it.

At the incorporation of the town in 1811 the following families were living in the present village of Saugerties: Jacobus Post was living under the Canoe Hill; John Post on what is now the corner of Market street and Ulster avenue (the Jeremiah Russell place); Peter Post on the Dawes property; Abraham Post, where is now the James Russell store, and in the building now in the rear of that store and which was then the village tavern; Cornelius Post where was lately the Gustave Peters saloon on Partition street; Petrus Myer where Sherwood D. Myer now lives; Abram Myer where J. M. Genthner lives; Peter I. Post on the Fosmyre place on Main street; Tjerck Schoonmaker on what is now the site

of the Whitaker building on Main street; John Burhans on the opposite corner where the Davis shoe store stands; Andrew McFarlane where is now the Zeigler saloon on Partition street; Luke Kiersted in the old Kiersted house on Main street; Peter Schoonmaker at the corner of Main street and Malden avenue where the late Peter P. Schoonmaker lived; James Brink on the Brink homestead on the river; Garret Mynderse in the old stone house at the river now the residence of F. T. Russell; Isaac Post in the old stone house on the dock near the mouth of the Esopus; Henry Heermance, who taught the village school, lived on Partition street below the Phoenix hotel; Samuel Schoonmaker on the Finger place on Market street; while Asa Bigelow, who had come to Saugerties from Connecticut in 1807, lived and kept store on the site of Russell Block.

Farther north were two small houses owned by Alexander McKenzie, one of which burned, while the other was afterwards long the home of Joel T. Persons. The only other house was that of Samuel Wolven east of the Canoe Hill, where is now the place of James O. Beers. Thus in 1811 there were but twenty-one houses in this village north of the Esopus, and this was but an increase of nine from the twelve found here in the spring of 1763, forty-eight

years before. But the progress was to be more rapid in immediately succeeding years, even before the boom came in 1825, with the coming of Henry Barclay.

The town was but a year old when the war of 1812 broke out. Four years before a military company had been formed in the town which was known as "The Rangers." It maintained its organization for thirty years. Captain John Clark, its commander, moved from the town in 1811, and the first lieutenant, Luke Kiersted, removed to Durham, Greene county; Abraham Post, the ensign, went to Ontario county in 1811, leaving the company under the command of the orderly sergeant, Peter Post. Then Captain Peter Elmendorf was placed in command, with Peter Post first lieutenant. The company was ordered to Plattsburg, where they served three months. Another company was formed from this town and Woodstock, of which William Osterhoudt died in the service; Daniel E. DuBois was killed in a sortie at Fort Erie, and Alexander McKenzie died in the service. The others who served from this town were of the garrison on Staten Island and were the following:—Andrew Brink, James Brink, Francis Brown, John H. Coon, Philip Carle, John H. Carr, Tjerck Burhans, Andrew DeWitt, Jr., John I. Decker, Egbert Dederick, John H. DuBois, Jeremiah

DuBois, Peter Elmendorf, Cornelius Fiero, Joshua Fiero, Peter M. Fiero, Peter Freligh, Valentine Freligh, John Hendrick, Cornelius Hoff, Thomas Holland, Abraham Hommel, Andrew Hommel, Isaac Hommel, John A. Hommel, Matthew Hommel, Levi Hommel, Solomon Hommel, Thomas A. Houghtaling, Henry Hovenburg, Alexander Ingram, Jacob I. Kipp, Frederick Krows, James Kortz, Solomon Lewis, William Low, fifer; Peter A. Low, William Lasher, Adam Moose, Benjamin C. Myer, Jonathan C. Myer, Peter D. Myer, Simeon Myer, Tjerck Myer, Isaac Myer, John A. Myer, Jacob Mauterstock, Benjamin Overbagh, Garret Post, Abraham I. Post Abram Post, Victor Post Samuel Raymond, John Rightmyer, Robert Schoonmaker, Egbert Schoonmaker, Joseph Schutt, John Shute, Jr., George J. Sitzer, Alexander Snyder, Elisha Snyder, Martin Snyder, Jeremiah Snyder, Joel Snyder, Noah Snyder, Peter I. Snyder, Zachariah Snyder, Jacob Staats, Henry Stewart, Moses Schutt, Jeremiah Teetsell, drummer; John Teetsell, Peter VanKeuren, Jonas VanEtten, Peter VanVlierden, Jacob Valck, Moses Valck, Aaron Vedder, Peter P. Whitaker, Peter L. Winne, Peter P. Winne, William Winne, Andrew Wolven, Evert H. Wynkoop, Henry Wynkoop, Admiral Warren, Gunn Watts, and Henry VanHovenberg. But

the service of those from this town was but short as the theatre of war was not in this vicinity, and the latter part of the conflict was on the ocean so largely, and the later military operations were around Washington and New Orleans.

Before this chapter is concluded mention should be made of the coming to this town of Rev. Dr. Henry Ostrander in 1812 to become pastor of the church of Katsbaan. Here he continued for fifty years, or until 1862. He was intellectually the most gifted man, probably, who ever resided in the town and his influence was very great, especially during the early years of his residence. Through his efforts a library was established in 1814 which consisted of about seven hundred volumes, covered with leather, and which was called "The Saugerties Library." It was kept in Katsbaan and some volumes of it were in existence as late as 1895. It was largely of historical works and travels, with volumes of adventure and such works as the "Spectator." Comparatively little fiction was in the library.

CHAPTER XL.

BEGINNING TO GROW.

With its incorporation as a town in 1811 Saugerties began to grow. At that date the village, as was shown in the last chapter, had added to its numbers but about nine houses since 1763, or in about forty-eight years, and the rest of the town had advanced but little as well. Until 1807 there had been only two churches in town, the Lutheran at West Camp and the Reformed in Katsbaan. The West Camp church had had intermittent pastorates before 1800, and during the existence of the Katsbaan church from 1730 to 1812 there had been at various times no less than thirty-two years of dependence upon occasional services of such ministers as could be obtained to administer the sacraments and preach as opportunity was afforded. The Reformed church of Flatbush had been organized in 1807 and had increased the number of the churches of the town at its organization to three. In May, 1812, Rev. Dr. Henry Ostrander was called to become the pastor of the Church of Katsbaan. He was immediately an intel-

lectual and moral force in the town. Within three years he had rebuilt the church in Katsbaan; had begun religious services at Saugerties, using for the next fourteen years the ball-room of the hotel of Frederick Krows; had begun services at Plattekill in conjunction with the pastor of the Flatbush church, and was conducting like services at Blue Mountain, Saxton, Malden and elsewhere. He organized the first Sunday school in the town in 1818; he started a town library of seven hundred volumes in Katsbaan in 1814 and almost as soon as he came into the town agitated the question of a classical school. That year (1812) witnessed the organization of the State system of district schools. Under it the town was divided into twelve school districts. Dr. Ostrander earnestly desired that a classical school be formed to give an advanced education. His wishes were not destined to an immediate realization. But such a school was organized in Malden in the early 30's and was conducted by Merritt Bradford, of Connecticut. It preceded the organization of the Saugerties Academy, which was instituted about 1855 when the congregation moved from the old brick church into the present Reformed Church in this village. While speaking of this church it is worthy of remark that services in Dutch were never held there. At the old

stone church in Katsbaan none other were held until the pastorate of Domine Van Vlieden closed in 1804. With the coming of Demarest in 1808 English services began and when Dr. Ostrander became pastor in 1812 he alternated the services between the two languages. When he began to preach in Saugerties in the ball-room of Frederick Krows he did so in English, with occasional Dutch, leaving those who desired Dutch preaching to have it at Katsbaan. As the older generation died less and less was had until in 1825 it ceased altogether. After that date Dr. Ostrander held an occasional Dutch service, but it was usually at a school house in the outlying parts of his congregation on a Sunday afternoon. The last Dutch sermon in the town of Saugerties was preached at the Blue Mountain church about 1886 by its pastor, the Rev. Abram G. Lansing, and was thoroughly enjoyed by his many parishioners who were able to understand it, as well as by many from surrounding congregations. It is an interesting question if an audience of three hundred could be gathered from our town population of ten thousand to-day who could understand a sermon in Dutch, even if it were in the colloquial dialect spoken as late as 1850.

To what was said above concerning the organization of schools it should be added that

from the very first settlement of the town the education of the young was attended to. One of the earliest of these chapters told how the Palatines of 1710 built a school house even before they built dwellings for themselves. And our glimpse in former chapters of the conditions of things in 1763 showed school houses in every settled locality within our borders. It was there noticed that when the educational act of 1812 went into force the trustees of the Katsbaan district (No. 6) received from the school board of that place a deed for the school house and site, and ever since the school has been conducted on that spot where for years before the youth had been trained; and it should be noticed that when the Kingston Academy, which had been founded in 1774, was incorporated in 1795, the third name of incorporators in the list was that of the Rev. Petrus Van Vlierden, pastor of the Katsbaan church.

From its formation as a town Saugerties began to be actively alive. The last chapter spoke of Asa Bigelow as a resident of the village and keeping store where is now Russell Block. He had begun the shipment of the produce of the town to New York markets. But ingress and exit by the Esopus creek, which was full of sand bars, was very uncertain, and in 1813 he removed to Bristol (now

Malden), where he had purchased a village site of the Wolven heirs in 1808 and built a frame store. In 1814, with Samuel Isham, he built the brick store so long known as "The Isham Store," and four years later the stone store, now the office of the Bluestone Company. Thus before 1820 the village of Malden had entered upon its prosperous career, and was to become the chief centre of the bluestone industry when the immense quarries would be discovered during the next decade. To the Wolven lands Bigelow had added by purchase in 1813 a part of the Schutt patent, so that the growing village had an unrestricted opportunity.

Although Bigelow withdrew from Saugerties village in those early years of the town to found Bristol, or Malden, others came to take his place. In the spring of 1814, Jeremiah Russell, who had been keeping a country store in Asbury, removed to Saugerties and engaged in the business of a merchant and forwarder, shipping to New York large quantities of wood, tan bark, staves and lumber. He built a number of sloops, and continued in business until 1833, when, disposing of it to his son, William F. Russell, he became a private banker. George A. Gay also engaged in mercantile pursuits in those earlier years and continued a merchant on the site of the present "Corner

Drug Store " until he was elected county clerk in 1840.

Nor were these the only centres of business in the town before 1820. Aside from Persen's store in Katsbaan, which had been the principal one for fifty years, and the store at Asbury, of which mention has been made, about 1820 William Adams opened one at West Camp, and for ten years Glasco had been growing into notice. About the time of the organization of the town a company had been formed for the manufacture of glass in Woodstock, and it was known as "The Woodstock Glass Company." Although their factory was not within the bounds of the town of Saugerties, their shipments were made across it. The company built its docks on the Hudson below Saugerties and built a road from the river to Bristol, in the town of Woodstock. This road has ever since been known as "The Glasco Turnpike." Upon its storehouse on the river was painted in large letters "The Glass Co. Store House," and by dropping the final "s" from the name the locality became known as Glasco. The company had hard sledding from the first. Dissensions arose, the transportation of raw material and finished products over more than ten miles of very rough and hilly roads cost more than the advantage of unlimited fuel for the furnaces was worth, and the

company became loaded with debts. On the 17th of August, 1816, Isaac Honfield recovered judgment against the glass company for \$76,018.56, and an execution seized the property. Despite the litigation an effort was made for years to keep the enterprise going. At last the burdens became so heavy that its life was crushed out, leaving no memorials of it but a local name for a road and for a village. The latter has been perpetuated by the inexhaustible deposits of blue clay for the manufacture of brick. Here uncounted millions have been made each year for more than half a century.

There remains one other event of the decade ending 1820, which requires our notice. It is the incorporation of the Methodist Episcopal Church of Saugerties. A certificate was filed bearing date August 12, 1815, but the church does not seem to have been organized until the the spring of 1828, when the lot on which the church now stand was bought of Henry Barclay on March 19, for \$200. During the next year the church was built.

The date of the first Methodist services in the town is not as clear as it might be. The Rev. John Crawford, a soldier of the Revolution, who came from Westchester county, is said to have preached in a barn which stood near the Exchange hotel in the village of Saugerties, as early as 1794, and also to have held

services in Asbury as early as 1800. From these dates services were occasionally and sometimes frequently held in private houses, with camp meetings annually in various parts of the town down to the year when the incorporating certificate was filed. Whatever the date of the first Methodist services, the Methodist Church of the town, so strong in numbers and influence in our day, may properly be said to have begun in the decade under consideration in this chapter.

CHAPTER XLI.

BUILDING THE FACTORIES AND OPENING THE QUARRIES.

In the last chapter we considered the growth of the town from its organization in 1811 through the first decade of its existence. That growth was rapid and steady. But the second decade was to witness a boom. This had two causes—the beginning of manufacturing and the opening of bluestone quarries.

Petrus Burhans and others conveyed to John Brink and Robert R. Livingston, under date of December 1, 1790, about one hundred and five acres of land on the north side of the Esopus in the village of Saugerties. The interest of Brink therein was sold to Livingston January 26, 1792, and October 1, 1806. Thus Robert R. Livingston became a landholder here and his holdings were increased until about 1820 he owned a large portion of the north side of the Esopus.

On the first day of September, 1825, the founder of the village and its industries appeared. Henry Barclay that day purchased for \$7,000 of Tjerck Schoonmaker, Jr., and

Jane, his wife, one hundred and fifty acres of land. Four months later, January 1, 1826, he completed his scheme by purchasing of Robert L. Livingston for \$28,250, forty-eight and one-fourth acres on the north side of the creek, a small tract on the south side and ten acres on an island in the Esopus called "Persen's Island." Barclay had now both sides of the stream, including the lower falls and the upper at Stony Point. He constructed a dam on the lower falls, cut the raceway through the rocks, and began to build the iron mill and the paper mill. The foundations for both these enterprises did not await the purchase of the Livingston property, but began in 1825 in the same month in which Barclay secured the land of Schoonmaker. In 1827 the Ulster Iron Company was formed and took possession of the iron mills in that year. John Simmons signed a contract with the company April 18, 1828 as manager. Some attempts had already begun at iron making, but Simmons remodeled the furnaces, and in the autumn of 1828 operations started in earnest. For sixty years this mill was the principal industry of this town. It is not purposed in this history to tell the story of the iron mill. The writer would only call attention to the quality of the iron made by an incident of the year 1840. The Navy Department desired chain cable of iron of ten-

acity disproportionate to the size of the iron it was proposed to use. A test was ordered, and the links were to be made of iron two and one-eighth inches in circumference. It was made in the Washington navy yard, with President Young, of the Ulster Iron Company, present. The cable stood the test. He then asked that it be subjected to twice the strain. It stood this. He then requested a greater strain. The officials demurred that it would break the chain. Mr. Young insisted, saying that he would risk the chain if they would the machine. They consented, and the test was applied. The links were drawn together until the chain resembled a solid bar of iron, and finally the machine broke down under the terrific force. The naval officials hung up the chain as a specimen of the iron America could produce.

With the building of the iron mill Barclay had laid the foundation for the paper mill, which was put in operation in October, 1827. Upon the death of Barclay in 1851 it passed into the hands of J. B. Sheffield & Co. This book is not to tell the history of the paper mill, which continued to turn out an increased product until it suspended, more than sixty years later. As an element in the growth of the town it ranks next to the manufacture of iron.

Three years later, in 1830, Isaac McGaw erected a building for the manufacture of calico prints on the north side of the Esopus, and below the falls, paying Henry Barclay a rental of \$850 a year for the water privilege. It was never used for the purpose, and in 1835 Charles Ripley bought and enlarged the works and began the manufacture of white lead. This was continued until after the beginning of the civil war of 1861-65, when the works were abandoned. In this connection the white lead works at Glenerie should be mentioned, which were also begun in 1835 and were finally closed only with the absorption of the Ulster White Lead Company into the lead trust.

With these industries, whose motive power was derived from the almost exhaustless power of the falls in the Esopus, the town grew into the most active and prosperous place in the Hudson river valley. The village was chartered as the village of Ulster in 1831, and continued as such until 1855, when it was re-incorporated as the village of Saugerties. The scope of this work will not cover the organization of the banks, fire companies, the origin of the steamboat lines, etc., of the town. These have followed the enterprise we have mentioned as such always follow. We are compelled to deal only with the origin of what distinctively made the town of Saugerties,

pausing solely to speak of the press. The first paper published in Saugerties was the *Ulster Palladium*, by P. J. Fish and C. Frary in 1828. The second was the *Ulster Star*, in 1833, by William Cully. Both died in their infancy. The third, the *Ulster Telegraph*, by Solomon S. Hommel in 1846, is still published as the *Saugerties Telegraph*.

Here we must notice the tanning industry which was largely carried on across the town during the first half of the Nineteenth Century, but which was not located distinctively within the town except the tannery of Peter B. Myer in this village, and the Shaler tannery at West Saugerties. All this has passed away with the passing of the hemlock forests. Also just speak of the manufacture of powder on the *Plattekill* and *Cauterskill* by the *Lafins*, although the latter mill was just over the county line. Nevertheless the powder was shipped through Saugerties. This industry was established in Fish Creek by Matthew Laflin in 1832 and developed into the great *Laflin & Rand Powder Company*. The business was finally removed from the town in 1874.

The story of the town includes the discovery and development of the blue stone quarries. Silas Brainard came to this town in 1831 to build for Henry Barclay a bridge over

the Esopus in this village. He heard of the opening of a flagging-stone quarry at Coeymans, and went to investigate. He found the stone to be the same as he had seen cropping out on the farm of John Valkenburgh at Unionville. Returning to town he purchased twenty acres of Valkenburgh for \$2,000 and opened a quarry. The following year his nephew, Nelson Brainard, purchased the remainder of the Valkenburgh farm, and engaged in the business. Meanwhile Elisha Parks had found the same blue flagging-stone at Quarryville, and the industry rapidly extended. This town became the centre of the business in the United States, and from Malden alone more than \$1,000,000 of dressed blue stone was shipped per annum for years.

A large industry to-day is brick making. Its development within forty years at Glasco has been enormous. Preceding chapters have spoken of this and of the earlier yard on the Beaver creek.

We have considered the nationalities of the first settlers. The earliest comers were the Dutch, with a few Huguenot families and one or two English. In 1710 the Palatine colony at West Camp brought in a preponderance of Rhineland Germans. More families of English descent came in during the next one hundred years from New England, but at their

close in 1811, when the town was organized, the proportion was practically the same. In the decade beginning with the coming of Henry Barclay in 1825, a great change came over the town as strong immigration affected its population. Many English iron-makers settled here, and many Irish. But far more of the latter came when the quarries were opened and Quarryville was settled. The lead mills brought many Germans from elsewhere in Germany than the Palatinate, and less akin to the Dutch. The making of brick in recent years has added hundreds of Italians. So that to-day it is probable that the descendants of the original Dutch and Palatines are not one-half of the population.

The last chapter said that in 1811 there were no churches in town, but the Reformed at Katsbaan and Flatbush and the Lutheran at West Camp. And it told of the organization of the Methodist church in 1815 in this village. During the '20's the Methodist church at Asbury was built. Before 1840 the influx of new elements of population had called for the organization of Trinity Episcopal in Saugerties in 1831; St. Mary's Catholic in Saugerties in 1832; the Baptist in Saugerties in 1833; the Presbyterian in Malden in 1834; the Reformed in Plattekill in 1838; and the separation of the original Reformed congregation

into Katsbaan with the stone church there, and that of Saugerties in the village of Ulster with the brick church which had been built in 1827. This division was made in 1839. Many other churches have been incorporated since that day, but later than the period under consideration. The consecutive story of the origin and development of the town of Saugerties has been as closely covered as the scope of this work will permit it and it has been brought down to a date late enough to take in all the elements that have entered into the making of the town.

CHAPTER XLII.

MILITARY LEADERS.

Among the names of the leaders of the patriots of the Revolution in Ulster county there is none shining with a brighter lustre than that of Colonel Johannis Snyder, who commanded the First Ulster Regiment during the war. The public services of George Clinton, James Clinton and Charles DeWitt have received recognition, but little has been said of those of Colonel Snyder. There are a few allusions to his services in some of the papers of The Ulster County Historical Society and in Sylvester's History of Ulster County, and Schoonmaker's History of Kingston speaks of him at some length. Most of what has been published is based upon the paper on "Vaughan's Expedition," read before the historical society by Col. George W. Pratt, October 16, 1860. This paper states that "no descendant of Col. Snyder remains in Kingston," which was an error that has been perpetuated by speakers and writers ever since, for a number of families in that city are descended from him, and many in this town.

Colonel Johannis Snyder was a son of George Snyder and Christina Theunis, his wife, and was born in what is now the town of Saugerties, January 4th, 1720. George Snyder was one of the Palatines who settled at West Camp. He removed to Kingston. Here for forty years, and up to the time of his death the colonel served as justice of the peace and Judge of the Court of Common Pleas.

This sketch is especially concerned with the military record of Colonel Snyder. The appointment, in August, 1775, of George Clinton as brigadier-general, occasioned deep feeling among the officers of the Northern Regiment of Ulster county, and they united in a protest against being superseded. Various attempts to settle were unsuccessfully made. Finally the First Regiment was officered, on May 1, 1776, with Colonel Snyder as colonel. It reported 472 officers and men. In April of that year he had been elected Delegate to the Provincial Congress and the regiment was not called to active service until Sept. 1, 1776, after the battles of Long Island and Harlem had put the British in possession of New York city. He was then directed to proceed to Fort Montgomery in the Highlands, opposite Anthony's Nose, to take command of The Levies. Here he arrived September 27. The three months for which his regiment had been

called out expired November 30, and as offensive operations by the British during the winter were impossible the regiment of Colonel Snyder returned home at the end of its term of service.

On May 5th, 1777, a great excitement was occasioned in Kingston by the act of Colonel Snyder in taking into custody Charles DeWitt, a member of the Convention which formed the first constitution of this State. The name of Charles DeWitt had been included in a list of delinquents in serving in the militia, and who had not furnished a substitute. By the orders of Colonel Snyder all such were taken into custody. DeWitt claimed exemption because of his position as member of the Convention. The Convention sided with him and reported that Colonel Snyder was "guilty of a high breach of the privilege of the Convention." He was ordered before it, but did not go. General George Clinton wrote a long letter defending Colonel Snyder and the matter was dropped. His regiment is shown by the Clinton papers, just published, to have been at Fort Montgomery as early as June 4th of this year (1777) under his command until the organization of the State government July 30, 1777, when Colonel Snyder took his seat as Member of Assembly in the first legislature chosen in the new State. To this office he was

repeatedly re-elected and sat as such in the legislatures of 1777, 1778, 1786, 1787 and 1791.

The year 1777 was the most momentous in the history of this State. It was at the darkest hour of the Revolution and the commonwealth was struggling to the birth. On the north Burgoyne was preparing to cut the revolting colonies in twain along the line of the lakes and the Hudson. On the south Howe and Sir Henry Clinton were preparing to co-operate, and all the energies of the patriots were aroused to defend the northern frontier and the passes of the Hudson. Colonel Snyder's activity was untiring. He was at the head of his regiment in the Highlands; he was assigned by Gen. George Clinton to almost every court-martial convened to try Tories who were active everywhere, and whom our troops were seizing on every hand; he was a member of the Council of Safety; he was Member of Assembly and in all these capacities, executive, legislative and judicial his strong common sense made him easily first. None could be more energetic than he when action was required, and none more calmly poised when conflicting evidence was to be weighed and decided on, and the opinion of none was more highly esteemed as measures were to be proposed for enactment into laws.

As before stated, Colonel Snyder left his

regiment to meet the first legislature, and after its prorogation to serve on the Council of Safety it appointed. For Gov. Clinton had prorogued the Legislature in view of the approach of the British. So Colonel Snyder was at Kingston when Gen. Vaughan landed to destroy it. Gov. Clinton had written to the colonel committing to him its defense. But with what? He could find but five small cannon and no troops. They were either with Governor Clinton defending the Highlands, or at Saratoga facing Burgoyne. All told, including old men and boys, not one hundred and fifty, and these poorly armed responded to his call. Colonel Snyder threw up a hasty earthwork at Ponckhockie, and one near the present site of the City Hall and planted his toy cannon. But the British, numbering about 2,000, soon drove away the defenders. The story of the destruction of Kingston is so familiar that it need not be told here.

After Governor Clinton withdrew to New Windsor and the Highlands with his forces Colonel Snyder was left here in charge of the remaining troops until he went to Poughkeepsie to meet with the Legislature, Jan. 5, 1778.

As spring approached the people of Kingston began to take measures to rebuild the settlement. But they needed assistance. The story is familiar of the noble contribution made by

Charleston, S. C., and the help of Robert R. Livingston. The official assistance received is less so. Governor Clinton assigned Colonel Snyder and a part of his regiment to Kingston, and he energetically took hold of the work with the men of his detachment.

Things assumed new life and energy when the colonel directed them and the town rapidly arose from its ruins. But new tasks awaited Colonel Snyder. The battle of Oriskany in August, 1777, and the bloody slaughter of the Indians who ambushed the patriot troops on that hard-fought field aroused the savages to vengeance. Everywhere the settlements on the frontier suffered greatly during the next three years. Wyoming, Cherry Valley and Minisink are witnesses to the cruelty of the fiendish foe. It is to the credit of Col. Snyder that no descent was made in Ulster county upon the exposed settlements. Governor Clinton committed the defense of its north-west frontier to him as he committed the south-west to Colonel Cantine. The enemies were not the Indians alone. More blood-thirsty than all were the Tories who were living all around among the patriots. While with his regiment in the service during the years 1776 and 1777 Colonel Snyder had been a member of most of the courts-martial held when Tories had been tried, and when their

guilt was proved had been severe. Now, with the frontier of Ulster county to defend against such human devils as gave to the tomahawk and scalping-knife defenceless women and children at Wyoming and Cherry Valley, Colonel Snyder laid a heavy hand upon the Tory whites who incited the red men to their fiendish deeds. An article in an Ulster county paper some years after the Revolution speaks of Colonel Snyder's success in unearthing their machinations, and defeating their plottings so invariably that no raids occurred in his territory except the one when Captain Jeremiah Snyder was captured.

Part of his regiment was usually stationed at Little Shandaken to watch the approach through the valley of the Esopus, and until the close of the war scouts constantly covered the territory from the Hurley woods to the Palenville Clove along the foot of the Catskills. On two or three occasions marauding Indians and Tories were turned back by finding their movements watched, and at least one raid in force along the line of the present Ulster and Delaware Railroad in Shandaken led by nearly one hundred Tories was thus foiled. To his regiment was attached a troop of light horse which did very efficient service and was commanded by Captain Sylvester Salisbury, most of the members of which had been recruited in the

town of Saugerties. A petition by them to Governor George Clinton will be found in another chapter in which they ask to remain with their old regiment.

With the advent of peace Colonel Snyder returned to his duties as magistrate, and to active labor in the Board of Trustees of the Corporation of Kingston, of which for many years he had been a member. Here he continued to serve until his death in 1794, at which time he was president of the board and had been of five preceding ones.

On Friday, August 22, 1794, Colonel Johannis Snyder died in the seventy-fifth year of his age. The next day a public funeral was given him. At three in the afternoon the procession was formed at his residence on Maiden Lane, and his remains were taken to their burial in the churchyard of the Dutch church. Minute guns were fired from field pieces stationed on "The Plains," as the present Academy Green was then called, during the march to the grave and as the procession returned. That procession was the greatest that Kingston had ever seen, and the officials, soldiers and citizens composed a rank and file which was longer than the distance from his residence to the grave.

His residence was on the south-west corner of Maiden Lane and Fair street, in Kingston on the site of the present residence of the Rev.

F. B. Seeley, the pastor of the Fair Street Reformed Church. Colonel Snyder's house was torn down in 1807 by Edward Eltinge, and the site has been occupied by the residences of various prominent families until it passed to its present owner a year ago.

The only other military officer above the rank of captain in the army of the Revolution who can be claimed as a Saugerties man was Major John Gillespy of the Fourth Ulster Militia. He was born in Glasgow, Scotland, in 1741, and was the son of John Gillespy and Elizabeth Wilkins, his wife. He was early left an orphan, and was brought to this country by an aunt, and reared by her at New Windsor, Orange county, New York. Here he lived and married Miss Margaret Smedes.

When a boy he volunteered in the French and Indian War and served in the navy on the vessel "Harlequin." He was engaged in one fight at sea, which lasted "nine glasses," or hours. After the war he served as justice of the peace.

When the colonies rebelled against Great Britain he immediately espoused their cause and offered his services. He was made major of the Fourth Ulster Militia, Colonel Johannes Hardenbergh commanding. Early in the sum-

mer of 1776 he went with the regiment to New York city to assist in its defense. The regiment then consisted of four companies from Ulster county and one from Livingston Manor, Columbia county. But many of the troops were without arms, and lacked most of the necessaries for service. Upon an earnest request from Colonel Hardenbergh addressed to General Woodhull, President of the State Convention, on the 9th of August, 1776, in which he stated that his troops asked to be supplied even if it were deducted from their pay, supplies were granted at the expense of the patriotic troops themselves.

On the 27th of the same month the bloody battle of Long Island was fought, in which this regiment bore its share. The Americans were defeated, and many of the prisoners taken were murdered in cold blood by the British and Hessians. Among these was General Woodhull himself.

The regiment participated in the battle of Harlem Heights and in the other engagements in the vicinity of New York city. During the summer of 1777 the regiment was with Governor George Clinton defending the passes of the Highlands of the Hudson, and when the passage was forced in October of that year, they came with the rest of Clinton's command to the relief of Kingston. They had reached

the residence of their colonel in Rosendale, eight miles from Kingston, on the afternoon of October 16th and halted temporarily. Major Gillespy was dealing out rations to his men when the smoke from the burning town of Kingston became visible. Orders to resume the march were immediately given, but as the troops came over the "Kijkuit" and caught sight of the town they found they were too late. The enemy were retiring to their vessels off Rondout.

Major Gillespy removed to Saugerties after the close of the war and died here January 5th, 1810, aged 69 years. During the whole of his residence in this town he was engaged in the business of a tanner, and his home was the constant resort of members of his old regiment to whom his hand and purse were ever open to so great an extent that he suffered much in financial depletion.

CHAPTER XLIII.

THE SAUGERTIES BARD.

Sir Walter Scott has made forever famous the troubadours of his native land, who wandered as minstrels through the mountains and valleys of Scotland, singing the brave deeds of olden times. All remember the opening lines of "The Lay of the Last Minstrel":

"The way was long, the way was cold,
The minstrel was infirm and old,
His withered cheek, and tresses gray,
Seemed to have known a better day;
The last of all the bards was he
Who sang of border chivalry.
For well-a-day! their date was fled,
His tuneful brethren were all dead,
And he, neglected and oppressed,
Wished to be with them and at rest."

There are many living to-day who will recall the wandering minstrel, who was universally known along the Hudson in the years preceding the Civil War.

All through the counties of Ulster and Greene, at least, was he well known in the years from 1835 to 1860; and often was he

seen all down the Hudson River valley, and even upon the streets of New York, and westward along the Mohawk he had occasionally wandered, and into Canada. He was harmless, eccentric, impulsive, and at times incoherent, with a faculty for impromptu rhyming, a sweet, sympathetic voice, and skill sufficient to draw the sweetest sounds from violin or flute. He would take a popular air, which everyone just then happened to be singing, and passing along the country sides would gather the local events and happenings. Then with violin in hand, would improvise the tale in a song to the popular air, and the passer by would stop to hear. And if the song caught the fancy of his auditors, he would have the words printed as a ballad, and with an old horse, and his loved violin and flute, he would drive away, along the country roads, or village streets, accompanied by his troop of dogs, singing, playing and selling his ballads.

Such was Henry S. Backus, "The Saugerties Bard," as he called himself. He was a native of the northern part of Greene county, New York. His father was a colonel in the War of 1812, and was at Sackett's Harbor during the building of Commodore Chauncey's fleet, and was shot in one of the conflicts on the Niagara frontier. The colonel was an agreeable companion, with an excellent voice

and great skill with musical instruments, and from him his son derived his love for martial music. A brother of the bard was educated at West Point, married a daughter of General Brady, U. S. A., became a colonel also, and repeatedly received honorable mention for gallantry in the Mexican War.

The subject of this sketch grew to manhood with a passion for what concerns a soldier. He possessed a peculiarly correct ear for martial music, and in early years was an efficient teacher of the fife, the drum and the bugle. Later he taught school, and coming to Saugerties he married a Miss Legg, with whom he lived for a number of years. After her death his mind received a peculiar bias and he began to lead the life of a wandering minstrel. When events occurred which startled the community, he often retired into the room in the rear of the store of his friend, John Swart, in the village of Saugerties, and reduced the account to rhyme. This he published, and on his minstrel tours would sell these penny ballads with others narrating striking events in the region. Much of his composition, in cold type, is the merest doggerel, which, when sung as an improvisation, in his sweet voice, accompanied by his charming violin, seemed to capture his auditors.

The songs are forgotten to all except a few

of the older inhabitants, and yet occasionally one of the almanacs of the Saugerties Bard comes to light, of one of the years from 1845 to 1855, which contains, besides the tables of an almanac, his ballads on the local events of the previous year. There is a little poetic merit in his "Dying Californian":

"Lay up nearer, brother, nearer.
For my limbs are growing cold;
And thy presence seemeth dearer
When thine arms around me fold.
I am dying, brother, dying,
Soon you'll miss me from your berth,
And my form will soon be lying
'Neath the coral-bedded earth."

One summer evening the writer remembers to have heard the notes of a whip-poor-will in a thicket not far away. Listening to the querulous complaint of the bird, he did not notice in the darkness that someone was passing. Presently a voice was heard to sing:

"In rural strains, with right good-will,
Loud sings the lovely whip-poor-will
From eve till dawn of day.
She all night long the descant sings,
Through shady groves her music rings,
A sharp and thrilling lay—
Whip-poor-will, whip-poor-will, whip-poor-will."

It was the Saugerties Bard, who, with a troop of dogs, and his ever-present violin,

passed by, and found his inspiration in the woodland note.

But the poetic muse was impractical. Though he wooed her and received her favors she did not provide for his subsistence. Friends, voluntarily, contributed for years to his support. But as his generation died, or sought homes elsewhere, the bard began in his older days to suffer want. The writer can see him now pass by, clad in a suit of gray, with long gray locks covered with a cap; and his wanderings took him from his more familiar haunts. The country during the winter of 1860-61 was in the throes of the excitement before the great Civil War. The minstrel was forgotten, and his mental powers were in their decadence. During the winter he was hardly seen. The night of Monday, May 13, 1861, was cold, cheerless and wet, as sometimes are nights in May. On Tuesday morning, James H. Gaddis, who kept a hotel at Katsbaan, went past a shed near his barn at an early hour. He saw a man lying there, and examining him found him unconscious, numb with the cold and almost starved. He was fed and taken to the village of Saugerties. Here some one entered a charge of vagrancy against him, and an officer was sent with him to the Kingston jail, and the harmless singer of the happenings of village and countryside was com-

pelled to learn that practical men had no compassion upon an impracticable troubadour who could not work, or, if he could, would rather sing. The sick and starving minstrel was locked in a cell, a physician prescribed for him, but never came to see him again. The jail physician threw away the medicines of the first practitioner and left others, but gave him no further attention. For two or three days the poor outcast tossed on his cot in his cell unattended, suffering physically and mentally until the morning of Monday, May 20, 1861, when he turned his face to the wall and breathed his last. One who had known him heard of it and went to the jail. On his cot was lying an emaciated skeleton, scantily clad and exhausted by starvation and sleeping out of doors. His violin was gone, his canine companions were dead, his friends had deserted him, and now, within the walls of a jail, the sweet voice of the Saugerties Bard was silenced forever, to the disgrace of those whose inhumanity saw in the helpless indigence of a harmless troubadour nothing but the worthlessness of a vagrant, fit only for a convict's cell.

CHAPTER XLIV.

“KATSBAAN.”

In a former chapter on the Beaver creek allusion was made to a poem, “Katsbaan,” from which a few lines were quoted. This poem was published in the Saugerties Telegraph about twenty-five years ago without the name of its author. As some lines are descriptive of persons and scenes of which former chapters speak it has been thought well to give the poem entire in this connection.

The glorious splendor of thine arching sky ;
The winning beauty of thy smiling fields,
As verdant in the summer's sun they lie,
Or golden with the stores their harvest yields,
Woo me, sweet Katsbaan, to thy paths to-day,
By brook, or lane, or field, or haunt to stray,
And let thine influence o'er my spirit steal,
To sing thy charms—thy history reveal.

Each day to greet thee, with enraptured haste
Taghkanic's peaks he climbs—the morning
sun ;
Then when, with ever new delight, has gazed
Through all the hours thy varied charms upon,
The Catskills makes his easel in the west
To paint the curtained chambers of his rest,—

Delighted, as thy beaming eyes behold
His cloud-wove tapestries of purpled gold.

Soft-flowing Beaver, by thy winding side
I wander with the hours of passing day.
Through thy pellucid depths and shallows glide
The phantom forms of finny tribes at play.
Umbrageous are thy banks. . In close embrace
The walnuts o'er thy bosom interlace ;
And, in their mottled shade, by yonder spring
The circling swallow dips his restless wing.

How clear those fountain depths reflect the
shade !

How glistening that crystalline outflow !
I take this cup, of shell of cocoa made,—
The virtues of "The Powder Spring" would
know.

Deep in that sparkling mirror plunge the cup,
And, of its liquid brightness, gather up
A draught medicinal. Health overflown !
Then grasp my pilgrim staff and wander on.

I pass along thy lanes and many a bee
His clover-gathered harvest homeward brings ;
Robert of Lincoln's burst of melody,
As rising from yon copse he floats and sings ;
Those fields of corn in serried ranks extend
With spears upraised, they would their stores
defend ;
And, as a veil of gauze no charm conceals,
That orchard fruit that every leaf reveals.

Another field, God's acre. Resting here
Behold the spoils the hand of death hath won :
Ashes to ashes, dust to dust. And year
By year the conflict and defeat goes on.

'Tis quiet here. Beneath this tree I'll rest,—
Ponder the questions springing in the breast :
Is it defeat ? And evermore to be ?
May not this field become a plain of victory ?

Behold this ancient church of mossy stone,—
The tapering spire that pointeth to the skies ;
Tell these of conquering Death, and this alone ?
Of hopeless griefs, and cheerless miseries ?
Let us approach the venerable pile
With reverent step and docile heart the while :
God's house it is. His Holy Name it bears
Honored through fifty and one hundred years.

What is the tale thy rock-based walls can tell ?
What teachings from that sacred desk within ?
“ I tell of victory over death and hell,—
I tell of God's great sacrifice for sin,—
I teach to all,—to thee if thou wouldst know,
God saved the world that sin had plunged in woe ! ”
Tell some calm message to my heart in strife.
“ I am the Resurrection and the Life.”

O comfort this ! His is the victory !
The conqueror Death His messenger becomes
To hold our bodies in security,
And take our spirits to their heavenly homes !
Within thy walls, O house, a while I wait.
Wouldst thou the history of thy years relate ?
Who were the heralds from the courts of grace
Who told these precious truths within this place ?

It speaks. “ From homes in ruin by the torch
of war ;
From hills ; from valleys by the storied Rhine ;
A band of storm-tossed exiles journeying far,
Here found a home, and here arose this shrine.

Here 'op de Kats Baan ' laid they stone on stone
With songs of praise to Him, their Guide alone ;
Far from the Fatherland, and far from war's
 uncease—

They raised this temple to the Prince of Peace.

" Here came the myriad-tongued, came Mancius,
 to weld

Dutchman and Palatine and Huguenot in one :
Their voices to a common Father swelled,—

Reformed or Lutheran,—an irenicon.
The Wallkill valley and the Hudson wide
Saw spires arise in vale ; on mountain side,—
Of an unceasing toil the monument,
As thirty years and two of life were spent.

" So stood I here revealing God to man ;
For many years thus floorless, fireless stood.
Then Mancius died. And eighteen years passed
 when

No pastor here to guide this flock to God.
'Twas Freedom's time ; and fortunate in their
 need

Came patriots to preach, who came to lead,—
To fan the patriot flame to ruddy glow.
Thus Doll ; thus Schuneman ; thus Westerlo.

" As Israel's tribes to Zion's holy hill,
Up to these courts the worshippers would come
From where is Saugerties ; where Plattekill,
Flatbush, Blue Mountain, Malden, Kiskatom :
All daughters fair of mine. But passing fair
Those faithful ones who traveled leagues to
 prayer.

Call others privileged ? These had this much ;
The gospel undefiled in Holland Dutch.

“ I see the pulpit high—an octagon.

Its pedestal, *doophuisje*, winding stair ;
And room within for one, and one alone ;

A canopy above, suspended there.

No spire, no bell ; but, 'neath the eaves, a porch
With trumpet hung to summon all to church :
Till innovation brought stoves, bell and spire,
Floors, straight-back pews, *voorleser* and a choir.

“ With brows enwreathed by the scholastic bays

In rivalry at far-famed Leyden won ;

Van Vlierden, first in learning and in grace,

Took up the task De Ronde had laid down.

Through eleven years of controversial storm,
While feuds ran high and party spirit warm,
He preached the cross, and multitudes were blest.
Then passed the short two years of Demarest.

“ The ‘ noblest Roman of them all ’ I see !

Before me stands Paul of this latter age !

Giant in logic—deep in philosophy—

Learned in the lore of classic history’s page—

Mighty in Scripture—theologian—

A lion-hearted, tender-hearted man !

Ostrander ! yes, thy locks of driven snow

Before me rise ! Thine eagle glances glow !

“ Perchance to-day the sovereignty of Heaven

The burden of his theme. On wings sublime

A view of God’s prerogatives is given ;

Or we with Moses up Mount Sinai climb.

Perchance His fatherhood. The wayward will,

Drawn by the filial cords he binds with skill ;

Breaking, is led to Abba, Father, call—

Returning home, a weeping prodigal.

“ Or justifying faith, that maketh whole,—
 Or hope—the anchor caught within the vail ;—
 Devotion—wing of the aspiring soul,—
 Or charity—that nevermore shall fail.
 Depravity—lo, an Egyptian night !
 God’s holiness—mount of transfiguring light !
 Man ruined ;—see the track a cyclone trod !
 Redeemed,—a living temple of his God !

“ Perchance God’s wondrous love, in Christ,
 declared :
 See, as he speaks, his tender bosom glow !
 Perchance the theme God’s arm in justice bared :
 The spirit of Elijah burning now.
 Perchance a Pisgah view ; as with the seers
 He reads with Daniel of the coming years ;
 Or walks with John the rock-ribbed isle of
 Greece,
 And sees the dawning of Millennial peace.

“ Or by the couch of pain, or bed of death
 He tells of Him who pain and sickness bore :
 Who made the grave His spoil : Who vanquisheth
 The King of Terrors now and evermore :
 Who bore our sins,—is willing to receive
 All who will come, repent, confess, believe.
 The dying, and the living, day by day
 He points to Jesus and he leads the way.

“ The story this of half a century’s space.
 Sons laid their sires to rest beneath this sod :
 His tears were dropped with theirs within this
 place ;
 Committing them unto their father’s God.
 Their sons in turn laid theirs. That pastor old—
 The old, old story of the Love re-told

That came and wept, and won at Bethany :
'Forevermore the dead shall live, in Me.'

" Often another and a different scene :
 Some Cana here, as once in Galilee :
He went, as following the Nazarene ;
 And when the vows in their sincerity
Were made his spirits burst their close restraint
With humor, wit, tales new, and old, and quaint :
As from a bubbling spring his mirth outpoured—
Cheer filled the room, as plenty filled the board.

" Such is the story of these ancient walls.
 I can not of the living pastors tell—
Of Collier, Chapman, Searle— in winning souls
 They served their Master, and they served Him
 well."
Such was the tale. With lingering steps, and
 slow,
And many a backward glance, I turned to go :
And still that voice oft in a silent hour
The " Old Stone Church's " tale re-tells with
 power.

Ye field of oaks, down all the hoary past
 The faithful sentries at this house of God ;
Ye braved the summer's lightning — winter's
 blast :

True to your charge in solid phalanx stood.
How few ye are ! About on every side
I see the stations where your comrades died ;
Faithful to death, in branch, in twig, in stem,
The zephyr sings e'en now their requiem.

Again I set me down. Around me lie
 The goodly farms that cover hill and plain ;

The happy homes ; their guardian roof-trees by :
 Do any after all these years remain
 An olden heritage, and unconveyed ?
 Behold the home by yonder maple's shade ;
 The spreading farm house, through whose open
 door
 We see God's gift of generations more.

I take my staff, dear Katsbaan, to depart ; —
 Thy well-taught lessons on my soul impressed ;
 And as I journey on would lift my heart
 To do His will, and leave with Him the rest.
 The evening shadows round my pathway lie, —
 The Catskills darken in the western sky ; —
 I soar in soul ! Their aspiration given :
 They lift their peaks and converse hold with
 heaven.

CHAPTER XLV.

OLD DUTCH BALLADS, RHYMES AND FOLK SONGS.

Among the pleasing recollections of every one brought up from infancy in a home where the parents were able to speak Dutch there is one that ever haunts the memory with its strains. It is that of the rhymes of the nursery. Who that was ever trotted on the knee of such a father can forget "Trip a trop a troontjes?"

Trip a trop a troontjes,
De varkens in de boontjes,
De koetjes in de klaver,
De paarden in de haver,
De eenjes in de water-plas,
De kalf in de lang gras ;
So groot mijn kleine poppetje was.

This might be rendered into English

Trip a trop a troontjes,
The pigs are in the bean vines,
The cows are in the clover blooms,
The horses in the oat fields,
The ducks are in the water-pond,
The calf is in the long grass ; —
So tall my little baby was !

Or, when he had thrown one leg over the knee of the other and made a saddle of the free foot, he asked you to ride, and then he sang

Zoo rijden de Heeren
 Met hun mooiye kleeren ;
 Zoo rijden de vrouwen
 Met hun bonte mouwen ;
 Dan komt de akkerman
 Met zijn paardjes toppertan ;
 Hij drijft voorbig nauw Amsterdam
 Met zijn koetsier achteran :
 Schoe, schoe paardjes
 Met zijn vlossa staartjes ;
 Draf, draf, draf.

A free-handed translation into English could render it :

So ride the Lords
 With their handsome clothes ;
 So ride their ladies
 With their calico sleeves ;
 Then comes the farmer
 With his horses tandem ;
 He drives them on to Amsterdam
 With his coachman behind :
 Shoe, shoe the horses
 With their flossy tails ;
 Trot, trot, trot.

And as the mother rocked a Dutch cradle she might be heard to sing

Slaap, kindje, slaap,
Daar buiten loopt een schaap,
Een schaap met vier witte voetjes,
Dat drinkt zijn melk zoo zoetjes :
Witte wol en zwarte wol,
Zoo krijgt ieder zijn buikje vol.

The English would be

Sleep, baby, sleep,
In the fields there runs a sheep,
A sheep with four white feet
That drinks its milk so sweet :
White wool and black wool ;
So either gets its stomach full.

When spinning-bees were held the maidens
would tease each other with the following
song :

- “ Spin, mijn lieve dochter,
Dan geve ik u een hoen.”
“ Ach ! mijn lieve moeder,
Ik hav het niet gedaan ;
Ik kan niet spinnen, —
Ach zie ! mijn vinger doet mijn zoo zeer.
- “ Spin, mijn lieve dochter,
Dan geve ik u een schaap.”
“ Ach ! mijn lieve moeder,
Het geve mij de gaap ;
Ik kan niet spinnen, —
Ach zie ! mijn vinger doet mijn zoo zeer.”
- “ Spin, mijn lieve dochter,
Dan geve ik u een koe.”
“ Ach ! mijn lieve moeder,

Het maakt mij zoo moe ;
 Ik kan niet spinnen, —
 Ach zie ! mijn vinger doet mijn zoo zeer.”

“ Spin, mijn lieve dochter,
 Dan geve ik u een paard.”
 “ Ach ! mijn lieve moeder,
 Ik ben het niet waard ;
 Ik kan niet spinnen, —
 Ach zie ! mijn vinger doet mijn zoo zeer.”

“ Spin mijn lieve dochter,
 Dan geve ik u een man.”
 “ Ach ! mijn lieve moeder,
 Dan gaan ik daaran ;
 Ik kan wel spinnen, —
 Ach zie ! mijn vinger doet mijn geen zeer.”

In English the song would be similar to this :

“ Spin, my beloved daughter,
 Then give I thee a hen.”
 “ Oh, my beloved mother,
 I never this have done ;
 I can not spin, —
 Oh, see ! my fingers are so sore.”

“ Spin, my beloved daughter,
 Then give I thee a sheep.”
 “ Oh, my beloved mother,
 That would only make me yawn ;
 I can not spin, —
 Oh, see ! my fingers are so sore.”

“ Spin, my beloved daughter,
 Then give I thee a cow.”

“ Oh, my beloved mother,
 That makes me so tired ;
 I can not spin,—
 Oh, see ! my fingers are so sore.”

“ Spin, my beloved daughter,
 Then give I thee a horse.”
 “ Oh, my beloved mother,
 It is not worth the while ;
 I can not spin,—
 Oh, see ! my fingers are so sore.”

“ Spin, my beloved daughter,
 Then give I you a husband.”
 “ Oh, my beloved mother,
 Then go I now right on ;
 I can spin well,—
 Oh, see ! my fingers do not get sore.”

A popular ballad of the olden time was

DE HEER EN DE MEISJE.

Ik zagen een mooije meisje ; en vroeg zij
 opstaan ;
 Voor haar zoete-lieve uit zij onderzoeken gaan :
 Zij trachten en zij zoeken uit onder de linde,
 Maar zij kunnen haar zoete-lieve niet ergens
 bevinde.

Met dat komt een heer, en, ophouding, hij roep ;
 “ Schoon meisje, wet gij wel wat gij zoek ? ”
 “ Ach ! wet gij mijn heer ik mijn zoete-lieve
 velore,
 En ik kun niet van hem zien,—ik kun niet van
 hem hoor.”

Met dat trekt de heer uit zijn fluweelen mouw
 Een ketting zoo lang van geellachtig goud :
 “ Schoon meisje, dit zal ik met blijdschap beschenk,
 Dan zal gij op uwe lieve niet langer gedenk.”

“ Hoewel de ketting bezitting zuck lengte,
 Dat het van de aarde tot de hemel bereik,
 Dan liever ik wensch voor eeuwig verreizen,
 Als dat ik een ander geliefde verkiezen.”

Met dat spreek de heer, bezweren bij zijn bloed ;
 “ Schoon meisje, wet gij wel wat gij doet ?
 Gij zeker zal zoo wezen mijn lieve huisvrouw.
 En ook een ander lieve zal ik ooit getrouw.”

Without attempting to give a translation in
 rhyme or rhythm, a rendering into English
 might read :

I saw a handsome maiden, and early she arose ;
 For her sweet-heart she went out to search :
 She tried and she searched out under the lindens,
 But she could not her sweet-heart anywhere find.

With that came a lord, and, holding up, he called :
 “ Beautiful maid, know you well what you seek ? ”
 “ Oh, know you, my lord, I my sweet-heart have
 lost,
 And I can not of him see ; I can not of him
 hear.”

With that drew the lord out his velvet sleeve
 A chain so long of yellow gold :
 “ Beautiful maid, this shall I with pleasure bestow,
 Then shall you on your love no longer think.”

“ Although the chain possessed such a length
That it from the earth to the heaven reached,
Then rather I desire to spend it forever in search,
As that I another lover must choose.”

With that spoke the lord, a swearing by his blood :
“ Beautiful maid, know you well what you do ?
You surely shall so be my loving wife,
And too no other love shall I ever marry.”

There was another little rhyme very widely
sung which runs after this manner :

Daar was een mooie meisje in het killetje vervallen :
Had ik niet hoor haar dompelen,—
Had ik niet hoor haar schreeuwen,—
Had haar kopje niet boven steken
Dan had zij wis verdrunken.

The English of this would be :

There was a handsome maiden in the little creek
had fallen :
Had I not heard her plunging,—
Had I not heard her screaming,—
Had not her head kept out
Then had she sure been drowned.

Some Dutch Mother Goose must surely
have dreamed the following nonsense rhymes.
How her patriotic soul delights to impale the
Spaniards whom her compatriots had so suc-
cessfully fought for eighty years :

Hinken de pinken
Zitten te klinken,—

Zat met de kan
 Dat hij uit gedrinken.
 “ Is daar niet in ?
 Laten het halen !
 Jan van Spanje
 Hij zal het betalen ! ”

Or, rendered into English, the rhyme runs :

Hinker the winker
 Sitting to touch glasses—
 Drunk with the can
 That he had emptied.
 “ Is there nothing in ?
 Let it be brought !
 John of Spain,
 He shall pay the bill ! ”

A boisterous boaster is thus described :

Daar komt hij ! Een snoeshaan geweldig gestampen !
 Een beest hij gebrullen ! Een mansbeeld gezwollen ;
 Een openlijk bloodard ! Het maakt neen vershil ;
 Het ware Jan van Spanje zonder zijn bril.

Or, in English :

There comes he ! A braggart hard riding !
 A beast he a-roaring ! A mannikin swelled up !
 An arrant coward ! It makes no difference ;
 He is John of Spain without his spectacles.

The allusion seems to be to the historic joke of Holland, in which the loss by the Duke of Alva of the city of Brille has always been called “ The loss of the Duke of Alva’s spectacles ” (zijn bril).

Here is a churning song :

Ha ! ja ! zaa ! ha ! ja ! zaantjes !
 De boter loopt door de roerstok eindjes.
 Ha ! ja ! je ! Ha ! ja ! je !
 Boterje, boterje, komt !
 Iedereen klientje tobbetje vol.

So far as it can be expressed in English, it would be :

Ha ! ja ! zaa ! ha ! ja zaantjes !
 The butter runs through the dasher's ends.
 Ha ! ja ! je ! Ha ! ja ! je !
 Butter, butter, come !
 Everybody a little tub full.

In this is a riddle :

Holder-de-bolder
 Dans boven de zolder ;
 En al de lands heeren
 Kunnen niet Holder-de-bolder
 Van de zolder pareeren.

The answer is "Smoke," and the English :

Head-over-heels
 Dances over the garret ;
 And all the nation's lords
 Can not Topsy-turvey
 Ward off from the garret.

The Netherland Mother Goose was surely the author of this :

“ Ik bakken mijn brood ; ik brouwen mijn bier ;—
 Had ik mijn paardjes ik zouda gij jagere.”

“ Wedden uwe paardjes weinigje man
Op den koop toe, achter an.”

This jingle may be in English :

“ I bake my bread ; I brew my beer ;
Had I my horses I would you drive.”
“ Wager your horses, little man,
Into the bargain, on behind.”

In one of her patriotic moods the venerable
dame thus sings :

Wij wil mee naar Engeland vare,
Voor Van Tromp doet Engeland zeer.
Engeland is opsluiten ;
De sluitel is verbreken.
Zwarte bedelaar, wat doen gij hier ?

The reference to Van Tromp is, without
doubt, to his great naval victories over the
British, after which the Dutch admiral sailed
up the English channel with a broom at his
masthead. The translation is :

We will also to England sail,
For Van Tromp does England sore.
England is locked up (blockaded) ;
The key is broken.
Black beggar, what do you here ?

At parties of young people in those days
this ditty was usually sung :

Het regent, en het hagelt, en 'tis onstuimig weder ;
In komt de boerman zuigen cider :

Wie wezen de maaier ? ik wezen de binder ;
Ik heb mijn lieve verloren ; waar zal ik vind haar ?

The song survives and is still sung in rural companies in the English version as follows :

It rains, and it hails, and 'tis boisterous weather ;
In comes the farmer sucking cider :
Who is the reaper ? I am the binder ;
I have my love lost ; where shall I find her ?

A popular children's rhyme was

Wie komt met mij naar koetjestal
Zoete melk ter halen ?
Ik en gij en kindjes al
Zal het wel betalen.
Vier paardjes voor wagen
Had het haast verjagen.
Toe, paardjes, toe.

which may be translated thus :

Who comes with me to the dairy
Sweet milk to bring ?
You and I and children all
Shall pay for it well.
Four horses before the wagon
Had almost run away with it.
Hurry, horses, hurry.

Here is an old riddle :

Een koning moet een koning onder een essche-
boom :
De koning tot de koning zegt, " Wat ben uwe
naam ? "

“ Goud ben mijn zadel ; zilver ben mijn teugel ;
essche ben mijn boog.

Ik vertelt mijn naam drie tijdt in een rij.”

(ANTWOORD, BEN.)

In English the riddle would run thus :

A king met a king under an ash tree :

The king to the king said, “ What is your name ? ”

“ Gold is my saddle ; silver is my bridle ; ash is
my bow.

I told my name three times in a row.”

(ANSWER, BEN.)

Here is the story of the trading of

EEN ARME SCHEPZEL.

“ Goeden-morgen, naaste Jan !

Waar komt gij zoo vroeg van daan ? ”

“ Van de markt.” “ Wat doen gij daar ? ”

“ Verkoopt mijn dochter.” “ Wat krijgt gij voor ? ”

“ Een schepel geld.” “ Geve mijn de geld.”

“ Kom aan,” zegt Jan.

“ Goeden-morgen, naaste Jan !

Waar komt gij zoo vroeg van daan ? ”

“ Van de markt.” “ Wat doen gij daar ? ”

“ Handelt mijn geld.” “ Wat krijgt gij voor ? ”

“ Een vosse paard.” “ Geve mijn de paard.”

“ Kom aan,” zegt Jan.

“ Goeden-morgen, naaste Jan !

Waar komt gij zoo vroeg van daan ? ”

“ Van de markt.” “ Wat doen gij daar ? ”

“ Handelt mijn paard.” “ Wat krijgt gij voor ? ”

“ Een bonte koe.” “ Geve mijn de koe.”

“ Kom aan,” zegt Jan.

“ Goeden-morgen, naaste Jan !

Waar komt gij zoo vroeg van daan ? ”

“ Van de markt.” “ Wat doen gij daar ? ”

“ Handelt mijn koe.” “ Wat krijgt gij voor ? ”

“ Een zwarte schaap.” “ Geve mijn de schaap.”

“ Kom aan,” zegt Jan.

“ Goeden-morgen, naaste Jan !

Waar komt gij zoo vroeg van daan ? ”

“ Van de markt.” “ Wat doen gij daar ? ”

“ Handelt mijn schaap.” “ Wat krijgt gij voor ? ”

“ Een kraaien hoen.” “ Geve mijn de hoen.”

“ Kom aan,” zegt Jan.

“ Goeden-morgen, naaste Jan !

Waar komt gij zoo vroeg van daan ? ”

“ Van de markt.” “ Wat doen gij daar ? ”

“ Handelt mijn hoen.” “ Wat krijgt gij voor ? ”

“ Een bits wetsteen.” “ Geve mijn de steen.”

“ Kom aan,” zegt Jan.

Met dat hij verwerpt zijn wetsteen achter zijn dochter.

“ Arme schepzel ” is a contemptuous expression meaning “ A poor creature,” and the story of his trading may be told in these words :

“ Good-morning, neighbor John !

Whence come you so early to-day ? ”

“ From the market.” “ What did you there ? ”

“ Sold my daughter.” “ What got you for her ? ”

“ Three pecks of money.” “ Give me the money.”

“ Come on,” said John.

“ Good-morning, neighbor John !

Whence come you so early to-day ? ”

“ From the market.” “ What did you there ? ”
“ Traded my money.” “ What got you for it ? ”
“ A sorrel horse.” “ Give me the horse.”
“ Come on,” said John.

The next day, John returned from the market, having traded his horse for a spotted cow, the next his cow for a black sheep, then his sheep for a crowing rooster, then the rooster for a keen whetstone. Then, realizing his foolishness, he threw the whetstone after his daughter.

When boys were anxious that the sap should loosen the bark that whistles might be made they sang

Sappen, sappen, rijpen !
Wanneer zal gij pijpen ?
Onsluit mij fluitje !
Los ! los ! los !

Or in English

Sap, sap, ripen !
When will ye pipe ?
Unlock my whistle !
Loosen ! loosen ! loosen !

The following was inscribed in an old book :

Die dit vint en brengt het hier,—
Om een appel ; om een peer :
Die het vint en niet het doet ;
Is hij gallig niet te goet.

And interpreted it is :

Who this finds and brings it here,—
About an apple,—about a pear :
Who it finds and does it not ;
His gall is not too good.

A St. Nicholas song is given in a former chapter. Here is another :

Zie ! de maan schijnt door de boomen !
Makkers, stuit uwe wild gerass !
De heilig avondstonds aankomen ;
De avonding van Santa Claus.
Van verwachting klopt onze hart—
Wie de koek krijgt ; wie de garde.

Attempting to render this into English we have

See ! the moon shines through the trees !
Comrades, stop your wild rackets !
The holy evening is approaching ;
The evening of Santa Claus.
With expectation throbs our heart—
Who the cake gets ; who the rod.

Then follows a short homily on diligence and industry :

Wie in de somer vergaardert haast,
Dan kun hij in de winter leest.
Die set hem bij een warme vier
En eet en drinkt op zijn plezier.
Maar die niet somer's haast gespart,
Men ziet wel hoe zijn winters varet ;

Zij leven lui, en slaapen lang ;
 En borgen op de Kersttijdt aen ;
 Betalen op St. Nimmer's dag ;
 Zulk lui gespuys ik niet vermaagh.
 De Schrift de wijz haar tot de mier ;
 Al is het maar een arme dier.

A free translation would make it :

Who in the summer reaps with speed,
 Then can he in the winter read.
 Such sits him by a warm fire
 And eats and drinks at his pleasure.
 But such as summer's haste have spared,
 Men see well how their winters go ;
 They live lazily, and sleep long ;
 And borrow on the Christmas next ;
 Paying upon St. Never's day.
 Such lazy rabble I do not delight in.
 The Scriptures point them to the ant ;
 Though it is but a poor insect.

Another rhyme which was often repeated in
 former days was this :

De molenaar is een groote dief,—
 De groote zakken have zijn lief ;
 De kleine laten hij doorlopen.
 Uit elk een zak
 Hij sluipen wat ;
 Dan nood hij niet eenig brood te koopen.

English readers may read it after this
 fashion :

The miller is a great thief,—
 The larger bags have his love ;

The smaller lets he run out.
Out of each bag
He steals a little ;
Then needs he not to buy any bread.

The following is a Mother Goose rhyme pure and simple :

Terre, leere, lits-a-lote—
De hond ligt in de keuken doode :
Zijn staart was voort ;
Zijn kop ontbloot.
Toe komt mijn heer, a jonger ;
En hij zegt de hond was dronker.
Den komt een timmerman,
En timmert de hond zijn staart weer aan.

Suppose we make this read

Terre, leere, lits-a-lote—
The dog lies in the kitchen dead :
His tail is gone ;
His head is bare.
Then comes my young lord ;
And he says the dog is drunk.
Then comes a carpenter,
And builds the tail on again.

Another children's riddle was similar to this:

Daar blijft een mooie dingetje altijd langst de dijk ;
Met zijn oogen op zijn kopje als rondom hij kijk ;
Met zijn voeten in de moeras hij dans wipperty-wop.
Raader, raader, raader, wat dingetje was dot ?

(ANTWOORD, KIKVORSCH.)

The riddle might be thus in English :

There lives a handsome little creature the while
beside the dyke ;
With his eyes above his head all around him he
gazes ;
With his feet in the swamp he dances whipperty-
whop.
Guesser, guesser, guesser, what creature is that?
(ANSWER, FROG.)

There was a riddle which ran after this sort :

Ik vare hier van oude land,
Verbonden dicht met ijzer band ;
Moorde have ik niet gedaan;—
Versluipen niet;
Bedriegen niet;
Maar een pin is in mijn kop verslaan.
(ANTWOORD, VAT.)

To English children the riddle would be :

I sailed here from the old land,
And am bound with iron bands;
Murder have I not done;—
Stolen not;
Cheated not;
Yet a peg is beaten into my head.
(ANSWER, CASK.)

Old-time horses are represented as saying

Op de berg slaan mij niet;
Neder de berg haast mij niet;
Door de vlakke spaar mij niet;
So kan ik werk en verget u niet.

An American horse would interpret this to read

Up the hill whip me not;
Down the hill speed me not;
Across the level spare me not;
So I can work and forget you not.

An old Dutch aphorism made use of by Washington Irving is this :

De waarheid die in duister lag ;
Die komt met klaarheid aan den dag.

It is just as true in English :

The truth that in the darkness lay ;
That comes with clearness in the day.

The advice in this motto is certainly judicious :

Drink wat klaar is ;
Spreek wat waar is ;
Eet wat gaar is.

Translated it is :

Drink what pure is ;
Speak what true is ;
Eat what is well cooked.

Something of an entirely different order is the following homely rhyme :

Wij planten eens aardappelse, — de oogst was niet
heel groote;

En wij gedachte zij zoo verrotten daar was nietig
voor ons nood.

Wij doen hen in de kelder in de mooie drogen
weer,

En de aardappelse ware mooie de heel jaar door.

An English version would have it :

We planted once potatoes ; the harvest was not
great ;

And we thought they had rotted so there was noth-
ing for our need.

We put them in the cellar in the lovely dry weather,
And the potatoes were excellent the whole year
through.



The following is cumulative after the man-
ner of the English " House that Jack Built " :

De eerste dag van Kersttijdt
Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn
Een patrijs in de peerboom.

De tweede dag van Kersttijdt
Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn
Twee tortelduif en een patrijs in de peerboom.

De derde dag van Kersttijdt
Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn
Drie Fransch hoenen, twee tortelduif en een patrijs
in de peerboom.

De vierde dag van Kersttijdt
Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn
Vier leggen ganzen, drie Fransch hoenen, twee tor-
telduif en een patrijs in de peerboom.

De vijfde dag van Kersttijdt

Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn

Vijf eendjes zwemming, vier leggen ganzen, drie
Fransch hoenen, twee tortelduif en een patrijs in de peerboom.

De zesde dag van Kersttijdt

Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn

Zes vioole speelen, vijf eendjes zwemming, vier
leggen ganzen, drie Fransch hoenen, twee
tortelduif en een patrijs in de peerboom.

De zevende dag van Kersttijdt

Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn

Zeven gedansen meisjes, zes vioole speelen, vijf
eendjes zwemming, vier leggen ganzen, drie
Fransch hoenen, twee tortelduif en een patrijs in de peerboom.

De achtste dag van Kersttijdt

Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn

Acht beene hammetje, zeven gedansen meisjes,
zes vioole speelen, vijf eendjes zwemming,
vier leggen ganzen, drie Fransch hoenen,
twee tortelduif en een patrijs in de peerboom.

De negende dag van Kersttijdt

Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn

Negen bulle brulling, acht beene hammetje, zeven
gedansen meisjes, zes vioole speelen, vijf
eendjes zwemming, vier leggen ganzen, drie
Fransch hoenen, twee tortelduif en een patrijs in de peerboom.

De tiende dag van Kersttijdt

Mijn lieve stuurde tot mijn

Tien paardjes drafen, negen bulle brulling, acht
beene hammetje, zeven gedansen meisjes,
zes vioole speelen, vijf eendjes zwemming,
vier leggen ganzen, drie Fransch hoenen,
twee tortelduif en een patrijs in de peer-
boom.

A rendering of the first verse and the tenth
will sufficiently translate it:

The first day of Christmas
My loved one sent to me
A partridge in the pear tree.

The last verse comprises all the rest :

The tenth day of Christmas
My loved one sent to me
Ten trotting horses, nine bulls bellowing, eight
bones of ham, seven dancing maidens, six
violins a-playing, five ducks a-swimming,
four geese a-laying, three French hens, two
turtle-doves and a partridge in the pear
tree. (A Dutch partridge is the American
quail.)

In giving an English rendering of the above
ballads and rhymes no attempt has been made
to do it in the English idiom. The translation
has usually been a bald and literal one. They
are given as closely as possible as they were
sung by our ancestors in the Dutch of former
days.

CHAPTER XLVI.

SAUGERTIES CHAPTER, DAUGHTERS OF THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

The latter years of the Nineteenth Century witnessed a revival of a spirit of patriotism in this country in the direction of a recognition of our debt to those who gave us the liberties we enjoy. The civil war had called forth all the energies of the American people, and in the appreciation of the valorous defense of the Union by the soldiers of that terrible conflict the deeds of their sires had almost passed out of sight. But during the last two decades a number of societies have arisen to teach this generation the debt thus owed. Among these there is none so large or so efficient as The Daughters of the American Revolution. For some time it had been felt that Saugerties should have a chapter. This work has told how true the fathers were. Their daughters felt that an obligation was resting upon them to cultivate this spirit in the rising generation of this town.

During the autumn of 1900 and the following winter the matter took a definite shape.

A preliminary meeting was held January 17, 1901, and on February 13, following, Saugerties Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, was organized with fourteen charter members. These were Mrs. Katharine C. Spaulding, Mrs. Lydia C. French, Mrs. Julia M. Phelps, Mrs. Annie M. F. Smedberg, Mrs. Marie K. W. James, Mrs. Eliza R. Seamon, Miss Jessie F. Dawes, Miss Katharine G. Sahler, Mrs. Ella F. Mould, Miss Ella DeWitt, Miss Ethel Gray, Mrs. Isabel F. Overbagh, Mrs. Kate S. F. Davis, Miss Annie Wilbur.

To effect this organization Mrs. Katharine C. Spaulding was elected Regent; Mrs. Lydia C. French, Vice-Regent; Mrs. Annie M. F. Smedberg, Recording Secretary; Mrs. Marie K. W. James, Corresponding Secretary; Mrs. Julia M. Phelps, Treasurer; Miss Jessie F. Dawes, Registrar, and Miss Ethel Gray, Historian.

To the chapter the following members were added before June 1st, 1902: Mrs. Fannie R. Cantine, Miss Edith Corse, Miss Julia E. Lamb, Miss Gertrude M. Lamb, Mrs. Maude M'F. Washburn, Mrs. Helen S. Gale, Mrs. M. E. P. Gillespy, Mrs. Peter Cantine, Mrs. Elizabeth S. W. Lewis, Mrs. Mary V. E. Burhans, Mrs. Nora B. Hommel, Mrs. Mary K. Pidgeon, Miss Abby P. Leland, Miss Anna M. Russell, Miss Jennie A. VanHoesen, Miss Mary E.

VanHoesen, Mrs. Anna E. S. Miller, Mrs. Mary G. Lasher, Mrs. Julia Welch Searing—thirty-three members in all.

The chapter determined to decorate the graves of such soldiers of the Revolution as are within the bounds of the town of Saugerties whose names and resting places are described in the appendix preceded by a list of the soldiers of the Revolution from the town. On Memorial Day, May 30, 1901, this was done by committees appointed to take charge of each locality.

Prizes have been offered by the chapter for papers upon subjects of Revolutionary history to pupils in our public schools, and this history of the town is now published at its request to tell fully and connectedly who they were who founded our town; what our ancestors did to secure the freedom we enjoy, and how they did it. The heritage will be better appreciated when we know what it cost, and know that it was secured by those whose blood flows in our veins.

APPENDIX.

SAUGERTIES SOLDIERS OF THE REVOLUTION.

The following list of those who, as residents of what is the present town of Saugerties, were soldiers in the patriot army during the American Revolution is probably, as correct as it can be made at this late day. Some names may be omitted; a few repeated; many served in more than one regiment and some names may be the same under more than one way of spelling. Great pains have been taken to include all.

FIRST ULSTER MILITIA.

Col. Johannis Snyder.

Capt. Matthew Dederick	Lieut. Peter Osterhoudt
Capt. John L. DeWitt	Lieut. Johannes Persen
Capt. Jeremiah Snyder	Lieut. Peter Post
Lieut. Peter Backer	Lieut. Edward Whitaker
Lieut. Petrus Eygenaer	Ensign Peter Brink, Jr.
Lieut. Martin Hommel	Ensign Stephen Fiero
Lieut. Tobias Myer	Ensign Tobias Wynkoop

Adam Baer	John Brink, Jr.
Cuffee, Adam Baer's slave	John A. Brink
Henry Baer	John G. Brink
John Baer	John T. Brink
Jurrie Baer	Peter Brink
John Beaver	Frederick Britt
Peter Beaver	William Britt
Cornelius Brinck	Barent Burhans
Cornelius C. Brinck	John Burhans
Hendrick Brink	John Burhans, Jr.
Jacob Brinck	Tjerck Burhans
Jacob Brink, Jr.	Hieronimus Carnright
John Brinck	Jurrie Carle
John C. Brink	George Carle
John J. Brink	Jacob Cunyes
Peter C. Brink	Henry B. Crum
Henry Brink	Henry W. Crum

Jacob Crum	Wilhelmus France
John Davenport	Johannes Freese
John B. Davis	Hendrick Freligh
Joseph Davis	Hendrick Freligh, Jr.
Sampson Davis	John Freligh
Samuel Davis	Samuel Freligh
William Davis	Abraham Hommel
Jacobus DuBois	Hermanus Hommel
James DuBois	Jurrie Hommel
William DuBois	Jurrie Hommel, Jr.
Gilbert Dederick	Petrus Hommel
Cato, Gilbert Dederick's slave	Harman Hommel, Jr.
John Dederick	John Kiersted
Jonathan Dederick	Wilhelmus Kiersted
Harmanus Dederick	Cornelius Langendyke
Jacobus Dederick	John Langendyke
Matthew DeRonde	Samuel Legg
John T. DeWitt	John Legg, Jr.
Abram DeWitt	Frederick Low
Cornelius DeWitt	Tjerck Low
Stephen Eckert	Jacobus Low
Henry Eckert	Abram Low
Jacob Eckert	Peter Magee
Jeremiah Eckert	Peter Magee, Jr.
Martinus Eckert	Samuel Magee
Solomon Eckert	Johannes Markle
Frederick Eygenaer	Joseph Martin
Jacob Eygenaer	Adam Mauterstock
John Eygenaer	Johannes Mauterstock
Johannes Eygenaer	Peter Mauterstock
Peter Eygenaer, Jr.	Jacob Mower
Peter P. Eygenaer	Cornelius Minklaer
William Eygenaer	Hermanus Minklaer
Cornelius Eygenaer	Christian Myer
Jacobus Eygenaer	Peter L. Myer
Peter D. Eygenaer	Stephen Myer
Jacob Eligh	Johannes Mower, Jr.
Johannes Eligh	Jacob Musier
Johannes Emerick	Abram Myer
Peter Emerick	Benjamin Myer
Wilhelmus Emerick	Benjamin Myer, Jr.
Wilhemus Emerick, Jr.	Cornelius Myer
John Emerick	Coonradt Myer
Peter Eygenaer	Ephraim Myer
Benjamin Felten	Henry Myer
John C. Fiero	Johannes Myer, Jr.
Peter Fiero	Peter Myer
Coonradt Fiero	Peter Myer, Jr.
Stephen Fiero	Peter B. Myer
William Fiero	Peter L. Myer
Coonradt Ferris	Peter T. Myer
Christian Fiero	Stephen Myer, Jr.
Christian Fiero, Jr.	Teunis Myer
Han Christian Fiero	William Myer, Jr.
George Foland	John Osterhoudt
Jacob Foland	Petrus Osterhoudt
Adam France	Peter L. Osterhoudt
Cornelius France	Abraham Osterhoudt
Jacob France	Cornelius Persen
Jacob France, Jr.	John Persen
Johannes France	Teunis Ploegh

Daniel Polhamus
 Abraham Post
 Abraham A. Post
 Cornelius Post
 Henry Post, Jr.
 Isaac Post
 Isaac Post, Jr.
 Jacobus Post
 John Post
 Martin Post
 Martin Post, Jr.
 Samuel Post
 Hermanus Rechtmyer
 Coonradt Rechtmyer
 George Rechtmyer
 George Rechtmyer, Jr.
 Johannes Rechtmyer
 Jurry W. Rechtmyer
 Peter Rechtmyer
 Andrew Richley
 Jacob Richley
 Lodewick Russell
 Peter Sax
 Samuel Schoonmaker
 Edward Schoonmaker
 Egbert Schoonmaker, Jr.
 Hiskia Schoonmaker
 Tjerck Schoonmaker
 Tjerck Schoonmaker, Jr.
 Christian Schutt
 Solomon Schutt
 August Shoe
 Henry Short
 Petrus Short
 Benjamin Snyder
 Christian Snyder
 Henry Snyder
 Johannes Snyder, Jr.
 Martinus Snyder

Solomon Snyder
 Valentine Trumpbour
 John Trumpbour
 Jacob Trumpbour
 Hendrick Turck
 Johannes Turck
 Johannes Teetsell
 Johannes Valk
 Wilhelmus Valk
 Abraham Valkenburgh
 John Valkenburgh
 Andries Van Leuven
 John Van Leuven
 John Van Leuven, Jr.
 Zachariah Van Leuven
 John Van Steenburgh
 Paulus Van Steenburgh
 Petrus Van Steenburgh
 Thomas Van Steenburgh
 John Viele
 Henry Wells
 Jacobus Wells
 Peter A. Winne
 Petrus Whitaker
 John Whitaker
 John Winne
 Benjamin Winne
 John Wolven
 Jeremiah Wolven
 John Wolven, Jr.
 Adam Wolven
 Evert Wynkoop
 Hezekiah Wynkoop
 John Wynkoop, Jr.
 William Wynkoop
 Daniel York
 Abraham Young
 Jeremiah Young
 Cornelius Wells.

FOURTH ULSTER MILITIA.

Major John Gillespy
 Lieut. Jurry Hommel
 Ensign Petrus Brinck

Lieut. Christian Fiero
 Lieut. Evert Wynkoop
 John Brink

John Brink, Jr.
 Peter Brink

Solomon Brink
 Johannes Mauterstock.

CAPTAIN SYLVESTER SALISBURY'S LIGHT HORSE TROOP.

Adam Wolven
 Abraham Keator
 John J. Crispell
 Benjamin Winne
 Roeloff Eltinge
 John DeWitt, Jr.
 Christian Doll
 John Brink, Jr.
 Moses Pattison
 Baltus Kieffer

Tjerck Low
 Peter Van Leuven
 Petrus Winne, Jr.
 Christian Fiero
 Henry P. Freligh
 Martin Hommel, Jr.
 John DeWitt, Jr.
 Hermanus Hommel
 John A. DeWitt
 Abraham Hommel

John E. Schoonmaker
 Peter C. Brinck
 Edward Osterhoudt
 Hendrick Turck

John Turck
 John Freligh
 Benjamin Felton.

COLONEL ALBERT PAWLING'S LEVIES.

Adam Brink
 Cornelius Brink
 Cornelius Brink, Jr.
 John Brink
 John C. Brink
 Tjerck Burhans
 John Eygenaer
 Coonradt Ferris
 Abraham Fiero
 Peter Fiero
 Adam France
 Abraham Myer
 Teunis Myer
 Peter Myer
 Benjamin Myer

William Myer
 Henry Post
 Isaac Post
 Jacobus Post
 Martin Post
 Samuel Post
 Christian Schutt
 Solomon Schutt
 Abraham Snyder
 Elias Snyder
 Christian Snyder
 Isaac Snyder
 John Turck
 Nicholas Trumpbour
 George Young

FIFTH REGIMENT OF THE LINE.

Adam Brink.

FOURTH WESTCHESTER MILITIA.

John Crawford.

NOTES.—Colonel Johannis Snyder's name is included in the list as he was a Saugerties man by birth, although living in Kingston at the time of the war. Major John Gillespy did not become a resident of Saugerties until after the war. The same is true of John Crawford, who became a minister of the Methodist Episcopal Church and was the father of that church in the town.

Cuffee, the slave of Adam Baer, under the law was entitled to his freedom after he had served three years, the State recompensing his master. So was Cato, the slave of Gilbert Dederick.

The list includes the names of some who at the beginning of the war were Tories. But they so angered their patriotic neighbors that they were

compelled either to emigrate to Canada, or enter the service of the army of the patriots. Many chose the latter course. Here are 316 names. Allowing for duplicates 250 men must have served.

THE GRAVES OF THE PATRIOTS.

During the year 1901 a thorough and extended search was made all over the town of Saugerties to locate and identify the graves of the soldiers of the Revolution who sleep in the bosom of the town. Most of the graves have lost the stones which marked them. Excepting the three cemeteries at Katsbaan, Saugerties and Plattekill these patriots lie scattered in almost forgotten graves upon the farms on which they lived at the close of the war.

It is not attempted to give the inscriptions in full. Only the name, and date of birth and death are given. And where only the date of death and age are told merely this is transcribed. A number of the inscriptions are in Dutch, and one is in Palatine German. Of these the English rendering is given. The page given with the name is the one on which such service is found in "New York in the Revolution." Where no regiment is mentioned the military service was in the First Ulster Regiment.

In the cemetery at the Katsbaan church are found the graves of

Cornelius Persen, who died 7 February 1827, aged 82 years, 11 months and 20 days. See page 189.

✓ Ephraim Myer, born 21 October 1759; died 18 February, 1843. Page 189.

Jacobus Wells; died 20 December 1798, aged 54 years. Page 190.

Christian Fiero, died 28 January 1826, aged 67 years, 1 month and 21 days. Page 188.

Johannes Mauterstock, died 31 January 1833; aged 81 years. Page 189.

Ensign Stephen Fiero, died 16 September 1831; aged 81 years and 5 months. Page 187.

Hermanus Rechtmyer, died 13 May 1835; aged 81 years, 2 months and 13 days. Page 189.

Abraham Fiero, died 4 November 1826; aged 63 years, 6 months and 5 days. He served in Colonel Albert Pawling's Regiment of the Levies. Page 83.

Peter Fiero, died 1802, aged 41 years. Page 188.

In the field southeast of the station at West Camp lie Captain Matthias Dederick, died 19 December 1808; aged 71 years, 9 months and 19 days. Page 187.

Wilhelmus Emerick, died 27 November 1841; aged 86 years. Page 188.

On the farm of Luther Myer, in Hommelville, is buried

Hermanus Hommel, died 1 April 1828; aged 82 years. Page 189.

On the farm of Russell Wynkoop, in a lonely cedar woods rests

Johannes Falck, born 1 January, 1740. Died 2 November 1822. Page 188.

On Rio Alto Stock Farm is the grave of

Lieut. Evert Wynkoop, died 16 April 1830; aged 86 years, 7 months and 8 days. Also in Fourth Ulster. Pages 191 and 200.

In the Main Street Cemetery, Saugerties, lie buried

John Brink, Jr., died 9 June 1814; aged 69 years, 8 months and 8 days. He also served in Fourth Ulster Regiment. Pages 187 and 200.

Major John Gillespy, died 5 January 1810; aged 69 years. He was of Fourth Ulster Regiment. Page 199.

Martinus Snyder, died 2 February 1831; aged 82 years, 11 months and 10 days. Page 190.

Samuel Schoonmaker, born 5 April 1755; died 25 March 1815. Page 190.

Petrus Myer, died 30 December 1813; aged 81 years, 5 months and 26 days. Page 189.

Abraham Myer, born 5 March 1762; died 1821. Page 189.

Johannes Myer, died 5 January 1829; aged 82 years, 10 months and 16 days. Page 189.

Isaac Post, died 31 July 1812; aged 51 years, 8 months and 5 days. Page 189.

Lieutenant Peter Post, died 12 March 1787; aged 43 years, 7 months and 25 days. Page 187.

Isaac Snyder, died 26 January 1829; aged 78 years, 5 months and 17 days. Page 290. His name is not on any list, but he was granted a Land Bounty Right for service in First Ulster Regiment.

On the Mynderse farm one stone remains. It is at the grave of

Henry Myer, died 30 September 1793; aged 51 years. Page 189.

On the Spaulding place are the two graves of

John VanLeuven, died 15 January 1805; aged 51 years, 10 months and 8 days. Page 190.

Andrew VanLeuven, died 23 May 1806; aged 51 years and 13 days. Page 190.

On the Schoentag place, near Glasco is buried

Abraham Osterhoudt, died 3 November 1817; aged 69 years, 6 months and 11 days Page 189.

On the farm of Allen Griffin, on the Hudson, at Flatbush are three graves:

Joseph Davis, born 5 July 1761; died 23 September 1836, page 188.

John Osterhoudt, died 23 December 1813; aged 73 years, 1 month and 23 days. Page 189.

Peter L. Osterhoudt, died 10 November 1809; aged 61 years, 5 months and 29 days. Page 189.

In the old cemetery in Plattekill, west of the church, is the largest cluster of Revolutionary graves in the town. Here lie

Ensign Peter Brink, died 16 March 1818; aged 68 years, 10 months and 15 days. Also in Fourth Ulster. Pages 187 and 200.

Stephen Myer, born 8 November 1760; died 4 April 1841. Page 189.

Peter B. Myer, born 12 June 1762; died 30 March 1841, Page 189.

Teunis Myer, died 22 November 1831; aged 76 years. Page 189.

Wilhelmus France, "A Revolutionary Soldier," who died 13 July 1818; aged 93 years, 9 months and 26 days. Page 188.

John C. Brink, died 30 June 1843; aged 80 years, 4 months and 25 days Page 187.

Benjamin Myer, died 12 December 1819; aged 89 years, 1 month and 21 days Page 189.

Peter C. Brink, died 22 January 1839; aged 81 years, 3 months and 12 days Page 187

Benjamin Winne, died 28 April 1808; aged 54 years. Page 191

Tjerck Burhans, died 25 November 1832; aged 73 years, 4 months. Page 187.

Jacob Conyes, died 27 February 1815; in his 83rd year. Page 187.

Johannes Snyder, born 28 August 1750; died 15 October 1815. Page 190.

Just north of the Gilsinger mill at Mt. Marion lies

Tjerck Low, died 8 May 1824; aged 79 years, 4 months and 13 days. Page 189

On the Trumbour farm at Mt. Marion is buried

Cornelius Langendyke, died 2 September 1838; aged 80 years and 6 days Page 189.

On the Francis Myer farm are the graves of

Lieutenant Tobias Myer, born 9 February 1734; died 28 January 1809. Page 187.

Peter T. Myer, died 10 October 1839; aged 77 years, 1 month and 28 days Page 189

On the Cantine farm at Churchland rest

Benjamin Myer Jr., born 1 November 1755; died 19 May 1800. Page 189

Stephanus Myer, born 25 July 1725; died 7 May 1790. Page 189

On the bank of the Hudson, on the grounds of John G. Myers, in a plot carefully tended lie the remains of

John Wolven, who died 26 September 1798; aged 55 years, 6 months and 26 days Page 191.

On the John W. Davis farm northeast of the West Shore station is the grave of

John Post, who died 20 November 180-, aged 71 years, 5 months and 15 days. Page 189.

In the cemetery at Unionville rests

John Valkenburgh, who died 24 September 1827, aged 82 years, 2 months and 20 days. Page 190.

At the foot of Mt. Marion, on the farm of C. S. Lowther are buried

Captain John Lucas DeWitt who died 27 May 1803, aged 72 years, 1 month and 9 days. Page 187.

Abraham DeWitt, died 9 December 1845; aged 82 years, 9 months and 19 days Page 188

On the farm of Larry VanWart, at Blue Mountain is the grave of

Samuel Freligh, who died 29 September 1838, aged 83 years, 8 months and 28 days. Page 188.

At the Greene county line, in the old cemetery on the borders of the Abeel and Saile farms north of Saxton repose:

Hezekiah Wynkoop, "A soldier of the Revolution," who died 19 June 1839, aged 89 years, 1 month and 22 days. Page 191.

Christian Myer, died 31 May 1817; aged 77 years, 9 months and 7 days. Page 189.

Cornelius Myer, died 22 July 1828; aged 63 years, 9 months and 18 days. Page 189.

At Saxton, west of the house of the late Colonel Christopher Fiero, is the grave of

Henry Wells, who died 1 March 1824, aged 83 years and 2 months. Page 190

South of Quarryville, on what was known as the Frank Stone farm, is found the grave of

Peter Hommel, who died 1 February 1828, aged 77 years, 3 months and 1 day. Page 189.

North of Asbury, on the Trumpbour farm, is the grave of

Valentine Trumpbour, who died 20 February 1830, in the 68th year of his age. Page 190.

In the old cemetery on the hill above West Camp landing are buried

Guysbert (Gilbert) Dederick, died 5 September 1837; aged 85 years. Page 188.

Jacob Trumpbour, died 11 April 1824; aged 75 years, 3 months and 3 days. Page 190.

Along the Hudson north of Malden, and just above the brickyard of John J. Cooney, is the grave of

Solomon Schutt, who died 27 April 1802, aged 78 years Page 190.

On the adjoining farm of E. P. Simmon, are two graves.

Joseph Martin, who died 1 November 1825, aged 98 years, 11 months and 6 days Page 189

Christian Schutt, who died 10 March 1825, aged 64 years, and 4 days. Page 190.

A little farther north along the river on the farm of the Friendship ice house are two graves,

Jacobus Dederick, who died 21 March 1829, aged 86 years and 7 months. Page 188.

Harmon Dederick, who died 6 May 1851, in the 88th year of his age. Page 188.

Christian Schutt and Solomon Schutt each had additional service in Colonel Albert Pawling's Regiment of the Levies. Page 86.

On the farm of the late Jeremiah O'Bryon, in Saxton, is the grave of William Myer, who died 21 July 1840, aged 81 years, 11 months and 16 days. Page 189.

On the farm of Washington Myer, at Blue Mountain, is the grave of George Young, born 1722; died 1799. He served in Colonel Albert Pawling's Regiment of the Levies. Page 87.

On the Judson Herrick farm, Pine Grove, rests John Wolven, who died 5 October 1826, aged 63 years, 9 months and 4 days. Page 191.

In the cemetery at the church in Asbury, are the remains of Rev. John Crawford, who died 7 March 1851, aged 91 years and 14 days. He served in the Fourth Westchester Regiment. Page 214.

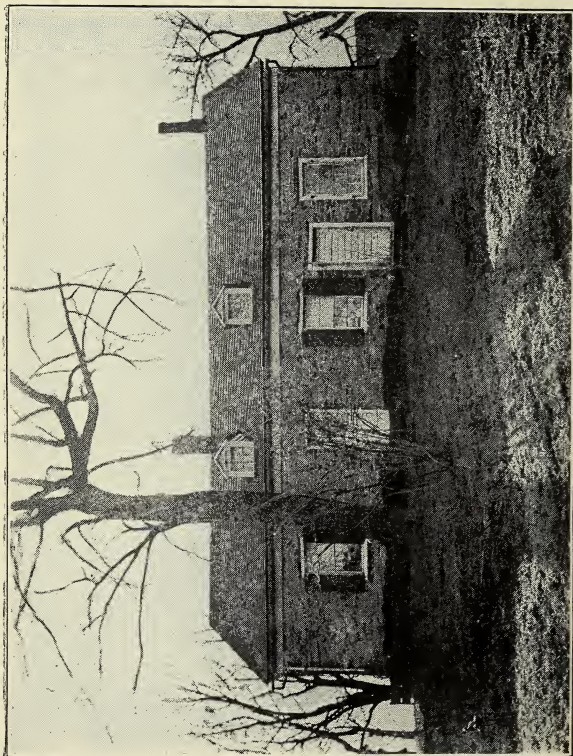
Thus the graves of seventy-two of the more than two hundred and forty from the town of Saugerties in the Revolution are here identified. Colonel Johannis Snyder, of the First Ulster Regiment, under whom nearly all served lies in a well-cared-for grave in the churchyard of the First Reformed Church, in Kingston. The graves of Captains Dederick and DeWitt of this town are in the list, but that of Captain Jeremiah Snyder is not known.

Of these two hundred and forty soldiers and over there remained sixteen who were living on September 10, 1832. On that day the people of Kingston celebrated the fiftieth year after the close of the war of the Revolution by giving a dinner in their honor in Kingston at which ninety-six veterans of the Revolution assembled from all over Ulster county. They met at the court house at 2 p. m. and formed in line, preceded by bands of music and followed by judges, court officials and citizens. The veterans

uncovered their heads as they began their last march, and cheered Old Glory as it was unfurled. Their ages were from 68 to 92. Each veteran carried a cane and attempted the old military step. Not a dry eye was in the mass of citizens on Wall street. Amid the roar of cannon the march to the dinner at the Kingston Hotel on Crown street was taken. But the ranks moved very slow. Most of the honored guests were over eighty years of age and before the hotel was reached some had to be assisted.

An ox had been roasted whole and every thing was appropriate to such an occasion. Crown street, Kingston Hotel, its spacious yard and all the buildings were packed. After the cloth was removed Hon. John Sudam, then the representative Ulster county orator, addressed the guests in his happiest vein, and his speech was long remembered as a masterpiece of the oratory of that day. Those present from Saugerties were Samuel Post, 72; Ephraim Myer, 73; Adam France, 75; Peter C. Brink, 75; John C. Brink and Adam Brink (twins), 70; Cornelius Langendyke, 74; Hezekiah Wynkoop, 83; Wilhelmus Emerick, 73; John Brink, 72; Conrad Fiero, 83; Abraham DeWitt, 70; Joseph Davis, 71; William Myer, 74; Abram Low, 68; Martin Post, 70.

Before we conclude the remarkable record of the family of Christian Myer must be noticed. He was one of the Palatines of 1710, and his home was at Churchland on the farm recently owned by the late



HOUSE OF CHRISTIAN MYER.

Peter Cantine. Of the above seventy-two soldiers whose graves are identified eighteen are those of sons, grandsons and one great-grandson of Christian Myer. Nor is this all. There were a number of soldiers who served in the Revolution who were sons of his daughters. Still without the latter a record of eighteen from one family is without parallel.

The accompanying illustration of the home of this patriotic family gives the house as it appears to-day. To a great extent it is altered from its appearance in Revolutionary days.

INDEX.

Abeel, Capt. Anthony, 178, 184, 186.

Adams, William, 288.

Algonquins, 10.

Allison, Col. Thomas, 64.

Andros Indian treaty, 15.

Armpachlo's bergh, 102.

Articles of Association, 122.

Asbury, barbecue at, 154.

Asbury, church, 297.

Aspel, Tunis, 80.

Astor, John Jacob, 80, 236.

Backer, Lieut. Petrus, 189.

Backus, Henry S., 310-315.

Baptist church, 297.

Bailley, Gen., 187.

Barbecue at Asbury, 154.

Barclay heights, 112.

Barclay, Henry, 112, 276, 291, 295.

Battelle & Renwick, 112.

Beaver creek, 3, 81, 86, 87, 257-261.

Beaver, Robert, 102.

Berckenmeyer, Rev. William C., 58, 246.

Bigelow, Asa, 106, 107, 286.

Big Vly, 19, 104, 108.

Blue stone quarries, 295, 296.

Bradford, Merritt, 284.

Brainard, Nelson, 296.

Brainard, Silas, 295.

Brant, Joseph, 157, 158, 161, 180.

Brick making, 260, 261, 289.

Brink, Capt Andrew, 68, 262, 266-274, 277.

Brink, Charles, 24, 95.

Brink, Cornelius P., 80.

Brink, Cornelius Lambertsen, 5, 24, 94.

Brink, Huybert Lambertsen, 94.

Brink, John, Jr., 22, 68, 69, 106, 275.

Brink, Ensign Petrus, 127.

Brink, Peter H., 95.

Brinnier, William D., 85.

Burgoyne, Gen. John, 110, 150, 152, 154.

Burhans, Barent, 68.

Burhans, Peter; Burhans, Samuel; Burhans, Isaac; Burhans, Abraham; Osterhoudt, James; 115.

Burhans, Wilhelmus, 22, 68.

Burr, Aaron, 87.

Canoe hill, 88, 102.

Cartrit's Kill, 91.

Catskills, the Dutch Domine of the, 149, 166, 167.

Cedar Clipje, 81, 96.

Churchland, 86, 91.

Clark, Col. Edward, 112.

Clement, William, 81, 208.

Clermont, the, 68, 266-274.

Coetus and Conferentie strife, 120.

Continentials, the, 143.

Continental currency, 170, 192.

Country physicians, 203-209.

Crapser, Milton, 97.

Crawford, Rev. John, 289.

Cregier, Capt. Martin, 6, 7, 71.

Cunyes, William H., 160.

Davenport, Richard, 79.

Daughters, American Revolution, Saugerties Chapter, 66, 346-348.

Dawes residence, 72, 219, 275.

Debating societies, 237.

Declaration of Independence, 128.

Dederick, Capt. Matthew, 127, 140, 189.

Dederick, Christian, 98.

Dederick, James E., 98.

Dederick, Myndert, 98.

Demarest, Rev. James D., 119, 250, 320.

DeKonde, Rev. Lambertus, 67, 73, 78, 120, 148, 192, 219, 249, 251, 320.

DeWitt, Capt John Lucas, 127, 140, 189.

DeWitt, Evert, 97.

DeWolfen, Gottfried, 104.

Doll, Rev. George J L., 163, 249, 319.

Dowling, Alexander, 93.

Dry goods, 230.

DuBois, Hiskia, 22, 72, 275.

Dutch Domine of the Catskills, 149, 166, 167.

Dutch language, 119, 284, 285.

Dutch preaching, 53, 119, 284, 285.

Dutch songs, 232, 324-345.

- Educational conditions, 197-202.
 Eelken's treaty, 9.
 Ehle, Rev. John Jacob, 52, 246.
 Eligh, Andries, 98.
 Eligh, Hans Ury 98.
 Ellinger, Mrs. 102.
 Esopus Indians, 10.
 Exemptions from military service, 145.
 Eygenaer, Frederick, 85.
 Eygenaer, Petrus, 88.
 Eygenaer, Lieut. Petrus, 127.
 Falckner, Rev. Daniel, 52, 246.
 Farm life, 192-196, 210-217, 218-225.
 Fees, Hendrick, 75.
 Fennal, John, 88.
 Fiero, Dr. Abram, 208.
 Fiero, Christian, 116, 122, 277.
 Fiero, Col. Christopher, 97.
 Fiero, Cornelius, 261.
 Fiero, J. Newton, 97.
 Fiero, Luther, 102.
 Fiero, Mrs. Mary, 80.
 Fiero, Valentine, 99.
 Fiero, William, 81, 208.
 Finger, Chauncey P., 81, 261.
 First postmaster, 106.
 Flax, 221.
 Flowers, 223, 224.
 Fort Niagara, 177, 178-180.
 Fraser, Alfred W., 76, 102.
 Freligh, Hendrick, 78.
 Freligh, Rev. Moses, 78.
 Freligh, Rev. Peter, 78.
 Freligh, Rev. Solomon, 78.
 Freligh, Peter, 78.
 Fruits, 223.
 Fullerton tract, 31, 103, 109.
 Fulton, Robert, 63, 266 274.
 Gay, George A., 287.
 Gerlach, John Christopher, 43.
 Germantown church, 62, 247.
 Germond, Mrs. 86, 259.
 Genthner, John Michael, 74, 275.
 Gillespy, Major John, 307.
 Glenerie, 112.
 Grauberger, Philip Peter, 43.
 Groz, Rev. Philip, 52.
 Hardenbergh, Col. Johannes, 126.
 Hager, Rev. John F., 37, 51, 246.
 Hayes, John, 20.
 Hiawatha, 9.
 Hoff, Cornelius, 88, 101.
 Hommel, Abram E., 78, 261.
 Hommel, Hermanus, 23, 85.
 Hommel, Isaac, 84.
 Hommel, Johannes, 87.
 Hommel, Ury, 85.
 Hommel, William H., 78, 261.
 Hooghteling, Major Philip, 134, 139.
 Hoornbeek, 169, 172.
 Hunter, Gov. Robert, 34, 36, 38, 39, 45.
 Indian battlefield, 11.
 Indian maize plantation, 71.
 Indian raids, 156-160, 161, 168-189.
 Industries, 60, 194-196, 218-238, 257-261.
 Iroquois, 10, 11.
 Isham, Samuel, 106, 107, 286.
 Jan, Nachte, 84, 161.
 Jordan, John J., 87.
 Johnson, Col. Guy, 178.
 Katsbaan, 1, 3, 17, 323.
 Katsbaan church, 71, 75-78, 119, 161, 164, 245-256, 318-321.
 Katskill Indians, 8, 10.
 Katskill (Leeds), 27, 163, 164.
 Kaufman, Jacob, 80, 277.
 Kiersted, Dr. Christopher, 208, 275.
 Kiersted, Dr. Christopher C., 209.
 Kiersted, John, 277.
 Kings Road, Old, 19, 23, 26, 85, 89, 107, 191.
 Kingston Commons, 4, 21, 23, 53, 75, 99, 109, 111, 276.
 Kocherthal, Rev. Joshua, 30, 37, 48, 51, 55-59, 246.
 Krows, Frederick, 72, 284.
 Laffin, Matthew, 295.
 Lamb, Daniel, 260.
 Langedyke, Cornelius, 92.
 Legg, John, 113, 115.
 Legg, Samuel, 114.
 Levies, the, 143.
 Livingston, Robert 31.
 Livingston, Robert R., 263, 266-272, 276, 304.
 Lowther, C. S., 92.
 Luke, John, 99.
 Luyck, Petrus, 81.
 Maize plantation, 71.
 Making the impeding chain, 137, 138.
 Malden church, 297.
 Malden turnpike, 107.
 Manck, Jacob, 43.
 Mancius, Rev. George W., 52, 62, 78, 119, 148, 247 319.
 Markle, Frederick 92.
 Markle, Matthias 97.
 Mauger Zaagertjes, 252.

Mauterstock, Dederick, 101, 102, 104.
 Mauterstock, John H., 102.
 McGaw, Isaac, 294.
 McGee, Peter, 98.
 Meals and Hay's patents, 18-21, 68, 69, 85, 86, 103, 105, 108, 113, 218.
 Militia, the, 144, 147.
 Military service, exemptions from, 145.
 Minklaer, Herman, 114.
 Minqua, Johannes, 23.
 Mohegans, 10.
 Monk, John, 88.
 Montreal, 182-186.
 Montross, Adam, 260.
 Mower, Jeremiah, 102.
 Mower, Johannes, 85.
 Mower, Nicholas, 98.
 Mowse, Peter, 102.
 Mt. Airy, 2.
 Mt. Marion, 2.
 Muddah Kill, the, 91, 92.
 Muddy Kill, the, 102.
 Myer, Benjamin, 92.
 Myer, Christian, 84.
 Myer, Christian, 92, 258, 358.
 Myer, Ephraim, 151.
 Myer, Ephraim I, 79, 215.
 Myer, Francis, 93.
 Myer, Ensign Hendrick, 127.
 Myer, Dr. Jesse, 92.
 Myer, Johannes, 22, 74, 275.
 Myer, Johannes (Oom Hans), 87, 89, 91, 110, 152.
 Myer, John Snyder, 79.
 Myer, Jonathan, 79.
 Myer, Luther, 23, 85, 215.
 Myer, Peter B., 295.
 Myer, Peter W., 85.
 Myer, Petrus, 22, 74, 275.
 Myer, Sherwood D., 74, 216, 275.
 Myer, Lieut. Tobias, 127.
 Myer, Wells, 87, 89.
 Myer, William, 86, 152.
 Myer, William, 107.
 Myers, John G., 73, 92, 108, 155.
 Mynderse, Garret, 279.
 Mynderse, Myndert, 20, 22, 23, 69, 219, 275.
 Naval stores, 35, 36, 40, 41.
 Negro Dutch church, 250.
 Newkirk, Arie, 23.
 Newkirk, Dr. Coonradt, 208.
 Niagara, fort, 177, 178-180.
 Niessen, Sergeant, 7, 14.
 Old Kings Road, 19, 23, 26, 85, 89, 107, 191.

Old sawyer, 5, 6, 17, 25, 68, 257.
 Orphan children apprenticed, 35.
 Osterhoudt, Cornelius, 79.
 Osterhoudt, Hendrick, 88.
 Osterhoudt, James; Burhans, Peter; Burhans, Samuel; Burhans, Isaac; Burhans, Abraham; 115.
 Osterhoudt, Lieut. Petrus, 127.
 Osterhoudt, Tunis, 93.
 Ostrander, Gideon P., 98.
 Ostrander, Rev. Dr. Henry, 79, 119, 165, 250, 282-285, 320.
 Overbaugh, John S., 97.
 Palatines, 28-59.
 Palatine dissatisfaction, 39.
 Palatines, names of, 46, 47.
 Palatines, number of, 44, 46.
 Palatine statement of grievances, 41.
 Parks, Elisha, 296.
 Paulison grant, 24, 93.
 Peoples road, 88.
 Persen, Cornelius, 73, 80, 81, 83, 88, 107, 121, 161, 191, 229, 230, 236, 278.
 Persen, John, 20, 69, 71, 75, 122, 218.
 Persen's store, 2, 80, 83, 88, 121, 148, 161, 191, 220, 230, 236.
 Petitions to Gov. Clinton, 241, 242.
 Pidgeon, Francis, 108.
 Pidgeon, Mrs. Frank, 155, 216.
 Pietersen, Jacob, 25.
 Pier, Arent Tunis, 112.
 Plattekill church, 297.
 Polhemus, David, 92.
 Post, Abraham, 22, 72, 73, 87, 121, 148, 191, 275, 278.
 Post, Sergeant Abraham, 65, 108.
 Post, Isaac, 22, 70, 73, 275, 279.
 Post, Jan, 22, 72, 275, 278.
 Post, Jacobus, 22, 72, 275.
 Post, Peter B., 91.
 Post, Lieut. Peter, 160.
 Post, Peter P., 277, 278.
 Post, Samuel, 277.
 Post's hotel, 72, 73, 87, 121, 148, 191, 284.
 Postmael, Jan Jansen, 21, 22.
 Postmaster, the first, 106.
 Quick, Reuben, 80.
 Reghtmyer, Coenradt, 23, 84.
 Reghtmyer, Hermanus, 23, 78.
 Regiment, First Ulster, 126, 139, 142, 149, 154, 158, 160, 240.
 Regiment, Fourth Ulster, 139, 141, 307-309.

- Rio Alto Stock Farm, 23, 86.
 Ripley, Charles, 294.
 Road, Old Kings, 19, 23, 26, 85, 89,
 107, 191
 Robert Chism's plantation, 93.
 Rondebergh, 115.
 Rowe, Frederick, Jr., 97, 174.
 Rowe, Wilhelmus, 98.
 Runnip, John, 169-180
 Russell, Frederick T., 20, 279.
 Russell, James, 72, 275.
 Russell, Jeremiah, 287.
 Russell, William F., 287

 Salisbury, Capt. Sylvester, 240.
 Sap boiling, 234.
 Saratoga, Saugerties troops at, 153.
 Saugerties academy, 254.
 Saugerties Chapter, D. A. R., 66,
 346-348.
 Saugerties library, 282, 284
 Saugerties, Methodist church, 289.
 Saugerties Reformed church, 254-
 256
 Saugerties Telegraph, 254, 295.
 Saw creek, 3, 17, 19, 25, 75, 99, 101.
 Sawyer, the old, 5, 6, 17, 25, 68,
 257.
 Sax, Addison, 81, 260.
 Sax, Evert, 23, 80.
 Sax, John P., 80.
 Schoonmaker, Egbert, 22, 70, 72,
 122
 Schoonmaker, Hendrick, 113.
 Schoonmaker, John T., 277.
 Schoonmaker, Mynderse, 113.
 Schoonmaker, Peter P., 70, 216.
 Schoonmaker, Samuel, 22, 70.
 Schoonmaker, Tjerck, 113.
 Schoharie, claimed by Palatines, 36.
 Schuneman, Rev. Johannes, 148,
 163, 249, 319
 Schutt, Myndert, 104, 106, 108.
 Scow ferry, 112
 Scram, Frederick, 93.
 Shank's Ben, 169.
 Shearing, 220, 226
 Sheffield, Joseph B., 113, 293.
 Short, Adam, 88
 Shoub, Johannes, 98.
 Singing schools, 237.
 Snyder, Capt Benjamin, 133, 181,
 219, 262, 277.
 Snyder, Christian, 85.
 Snyder, Elias, 79, 84, 168-190.
 Snyder, Elisha, 277.
 Snyder, Hans Martin, 251.
 Snyder, Isaac, 91.
 Snyder, Captain Jeremiah, 84, 97,
 127, 140, 160, 168-190, 189, 240,
 244, 357.
 Snyder, Colonel Johannis, 126, 141,
 142, 149, 154, 158, 160, 189, 239,
 240, 299-307, 357.
 Snyder, Maria, 87.
 Snyder, Noah, 87.
 Snyder, Peter, 92.
 Snyder, Peter I., 87.
 Snyder, Peter V., 88.
 Snyder, Zachariah, 99.
 Soap making, 235
 Social life, 232
 Soldier's dinner, 357.
 Spaulding, Charles A., 114.
 Spellman, Thomas, 87
 Spinning and weaving, 221, 227,
 228.
 St. Mary's church, 297.
 Steene Herte fonteyne, 99, 100.
 Stock Farm, Rio Alto, 23, 86.
 Sudam, John, 358.
 Swart, Lawrence, 115.

 Tappen, Christopher, assaulted,
 134.
 Tappen journal, 129-139.
 Tawasentha, 9.
 TenBroeck, Gen. Peter, 105, 151,
 153, 155.
 Terwilliger, Martin, 257.
 Threshing, 235.
 Tivoli ferry, 68.
 Tobacco, 220.
 Top, Jan, 83, 191.
 Trapping, 236.
 Traphagen grant, 24, 93.
 Treaty of peace, 188.
 Trinity Episcopal church, 297.
 Trumpbour, Nicholas, 23.
 Trumpbour, Johannes, 80.
 Turkey point, 114.

 Ulster Iron Works, 293.
 Ulster Palladium, 254, 295.
 Ulster Star, 254, 295.
 Ulster Telegraph, 254, 295.
 Unionville, 87, 161.
 Ury, 112.

 Valk, Johannes, 86.
 Valk, Jonah, 277.
 Valk, Wilhelmus, 88.
 Valk, William, 102.
 Valkenburgh, Hieronymous, 87.
 Valkenburgh, John, 87.
 Valkenburgh, Peter M., 81.
 Valkenburgh, Stephen F., 81.
 Valkenburgh, William, 81.
 Vaughan's expedition, 73, 105, 155.
 Van Driessen, Rev. Johannes, 62,
 247.
 Van Hoesen's mill, 260.

Van Keuren, Ephraim, 87.
 Van Leuven, Andries, 114.
 Van Leuven, Peter, 114.
 Van Schaick, Anthony, 160, 244.
 Van Steenberg, Nathan, 84.
 Van Steenberg, John, 107.
 Van Steenberg, Thomas, 108.
 Van Vlierden, Rev. Petrus, 250,
 285, 286, 320.
 Van Wart, Larry, 259.
 Vegetables, 223.
 Veteran's dinner, 357.
 Wanton island, 11, 104, 109.
 Washburn, George W., 19.
 Washburn, Richard C., 19, 113.
 Weaving, 221, 227, 228.
 Weiser, Capt. John Conrad, 61.
 Wells, Sergeant Cornelius, 152.
 Wells, Samuel, 97.
 West Camp, 1. 33. 34-59, 257.
 West Camp church, 50-54, 59, 148.
 Westerlo, Rev. Eilardus, 163, 249,
 319.
 Whitaker, Egbert, 115.

Whitaker James, 115.
 White oak forest, 75, 101.
 Winedecker, Capt. Hartman, 61.
 Winne, Aaron, 97.
 Winne, Lawrence, 97.
 Winne, Petrus, 24, 92, 94.
 Wolven, Abraham, 277.
 Wolven. Major Dan, 73, 104, 105.
 Wood, Edward, 113.
 Wood, John, 20.
 Woodstock Glass Company, 288.
 Wynkoop, Major Adrian, 134, 142.
 Wynkoop, Cornelius, 277.
 Wynkoop, Evert, 23, 86.
 Wynkoop, Lieut. Evert, 127.
 Wynkoop, Judge Henry, 260.
 Wynkoop, Hezekiah, 277.
 Wynkoop, Mynderse, 92.
 Wynkoop, Russell, 86, 260.
 Wynkoop Capt. Tobias, 64, 65, 86.
 Wynkoop, Tobias, 151.
 Young, Johannes, 84.
 Zenger, John Peter, 48.



